



Department of Political and Social Sciences

**The Political Independence
of Public Service
Broadcasters**

Chris Hanretty

Thesis submitted for assessment with a view to obtaining the degree of
Doctor of Political and Social Sciences of the European University Institute

Florence
December 2009

EUROPEAN UNIVERSITY INSTITUTE
Department of Political and Social Sciences

The Political Independence of Public Service Broadcasters

Chris Hanretty

Thesis submitted for assessment with a view to obtaining the degree of
Doctor of Political and Social Sciences of the European University Institute

Examining Board:

Prof. Alexander H. Trechsel, European University Institute (Supervisor)
Prof. Gianpietro Mazzoleni, Università degli Studi di Milano (External supervisor)
Prof. Adrienne Héritier, European University Institute
Prof. Anker Brink Lund, Copenhagen Business School

© 2009, Chris Hanretty
Licensed under a [Creative Commons Attribution-
Noncommercial-Share Alike](#) licence.

ABSTRACT

In this thesis, I demonstrate that the degree of political independence that a public service broadcaster has depends on the degree of legal protection given to it, and on the size of the market for news in that country. The latter affects broadcaster independence by creating more standardized and professionalized news, which in turn reduces politicians' incentives to intervene in the broadcaster. The former affects broadcaster independence by making it less likely that such intervention will be effective.

I demonstrate these claims in two ways. First, I conduct a large-N statistical analysis of 36 public service broadcasters (PSBs), in which I demonstrate that legal protection news market size are statistically significant predictors of PSB independence (as I operationalize it), and that other suggested explanatory factors — party system polarization and bureaucratic partisanship — have no effect.

Second, I carry out a comparative historical analysis of six European PSBs — Radiotelevisione Italiana, Radiotelevisión Española, Radio Telefís Éireann (Ireland), the British Broadcasting Corporation, Danmarks Radio, and Sveriges Radio and its associated companies (Sweden) — and substantiate the claims made in my statistical analysis. In particular, I demonstrate that where the market for news was bigger, broadcasters capitalised on pre-existing journalistic experience, adopting the house-styles of press agencies and learning from journalists' associations. Conversely, where the market was small, that experience could not be drawn on, and broadcast journalism attracted political intervention.

CONTENTS

I	THEORY	1
1	Introduction	3
1.1	What is a public service broadcaster?	6
1.2	What is political independence?	12
1.3	Why does this matter?	13
1.4	What explanations exist already?	17
1.5	The outline of the thesis	22
2	A theory of public broadcaster independence	23
2.1	Politicians	23
2.2	Journalists	27
2.3	Theoretical assumptions and realism	31
2.4	Management	32
2.5	The possibility of intervention	33
2.6	The desirability of intervention	34
2.7	The defeasibility of intervention	35
2.8	On the market for news and rule development	39
2.9	On partisanship	44
2.10	More on sanctioning	46
2.11	Summary and list of hypotheses	51
II	STATISTICS	55
3	A statistical model of PSB independence	57
3.1	Operationalization	58
3.2	Methodology	67
3.3	Results	68
4	Who is appointed?	71
4.1	Veto players and appointments	72
4.2	Legislative provisions	76
4.3	Data	84
4.4	Partisanship	86
4.5	Conclusion	94
5	Who controls the purse-strings? Who asks the questions?	97
5.1	Data on funding	101
5.2	Parliamentary questioning	106
5.3	The Mediterranean countries	108
5.4	The North Atlantic countries	112
5.5	The Scandinavian countries	114

5.6	But what about the plenary?	115
5.7	Conclusions	118
III HISTORY 119		
6	The absence of Caesars: Rai	123
6.1	Fascism and the post-war period (1924 — 1960)	125
6.2	The Bernabei era (1961 — 1974)	133
6.3	Reform to reform (1975 — 1992)	138
6.4	New hopes dashed (1993 — 2008)	154
6.5	Conclusion	165
7	Radiotelevisión Española	169
7.1	From dictatorship to transition (1923 — 1977)	169
7.2	The early democratic years (1977 — 1996)	172
7.3	From Aznar to Zapatero	176
7.4	Conclusion	178
8	'Treading delicately like Agag': the BBC	181
8.1	From foundation to competition (1922 — 1955)	182
8.2	The years of Butskellism (1954 — 1979)	202
8.3	From Thatcher to Blair (1979 — 2005)	216
8.4	Conclusion	227
9	Radio Telefís Éireann	231
9.1	From 2RN to television (1926 — 1960)	232
9.2	Refoundation, confrontation (1960 — 1976)	235
9.3	1976 until the present day	240
9.4	Conclusion	244
10	'Disturbing Neither God Nor Hitler': SR/SVT	247
10.1	AB Radiotjänst, 1924 - 1954	249
10.2	Sveriges Radio 1955 - 1975	261
10.3	'68 and all that: Sveriges Radio and Sveriges Television	272
10.4	Conclusion	279
11	Danmarks Radio	283
11.1	Establishment until the fifties (1922 — 1955)	283
11.2	The fifties until vänstervridning (1957 — 1974)	287
11.3	The professionalization turn? (1980 —)	295
11.4	Conclusion	299
IV CONCLUSIONS 301		
12	Comparing the six broadcasters	303
12.1	The market and professionalization	304
12.2	The journalists	307
12.3	Management	309
12.4	Rules	310
12.5	Conclusion	315

13 Conclusion	317
13.1 Reassessing independence	317
13.2 Reassessing legal protection	319
13.3 Reassessing the causal chain	321
13.4 Implications for reform	322
13.5 Continued relevance	325
A Legal sources	329
Bibliography	331

LIST OF TABLES

Table 1.1	List of national public service broadcasters	10
Table 3.1	Values of independence for thirty-six broadcasters	60
Table 3.2	Index of legal protection	65
Table 3.3	Regression results	68
Table 4.1	Expectations of partisanship by appointment method	84
Table 5.1	Analysis of variance in licence fee changes by government	105
Table 5.2	Questions per parliamentarian per term	118
Table 12.1	Comparison of countries	305

LIST OF FIGURES

Figure 2.1	Types of journalist	29
Figure 2.2	Newspaper circulation and journalists' associationalism	43
Figure 2.3	Legislation constrains	50
Figure 2.4	Legislation is epiphenomenal	51
Figure 3.1	Predicted versus actual results, statistical model	70
Figure 4.1	Appointment	72
Figure 4.2	Partisanship of PSB boards	87
Figure 4.3	Box-plot of mean partisanship by appointment method	88
Figure 5.1	Real value of licence fees over time	102
Figure 6.1	Rai timeline	124
Figure 7.1	RTVE timeline	170
Figure 8.1	BBC timeline	182
Figure 9.1	RTÉ timeline	232
Figure 10.1	SVT timeline	248
Figure 11.1	DR timeline	284

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Many, many people helped me to write this thesis. One most important debt is to those people who brought grist to the mill – or who, in other words, provided data: Tom Quinn (RTÉ), Cristina Jurca at TVR, Ingrida Veiksa (LTV), Tina Malavasic (RTVSLO), Margit Desch and Wolf Har-ranth (ÖRF), Tiiu Siim (ERR), Heike von Debschitz (ZDF), Grethe Haaland (NRK) and Diane Ferguson (CBC), Börje Sjöman at the Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv, and Ursula Haegerström, Margareta Cronholm and Erik Fichtelius (SVT).

A special mention should go to the staff of the EUI library: Ruth Nirere-Gbikpi in particular has had to deal with at least one inter-library loan which I was careless enough to lose.

This thesis began as an M.Phil thesis at Oxford. From that time, I would like to thank David Hine and Nigel Bowles (both of whom are arguably to blame for the fact that I decided to study for a doctorate at all), and Michael Tatham, who has been an unceasingly cheerful friend, colleague and occasional critic for the past five years.

A chorus of friends have helped me with the finer points of their national cultures and languages. They include, but are not limited to, Chiara Ruffa, Costanza Hermanin, Sergi Pardos-Prado, Johan Davidsson, Jeppe Dørup Olesen, Bart van Vooren, Niki Yordanova, Elias Dinas, and Lúcio Tomé Féteira.

I also owe thanks to a number of fully-paid up academics. Per Mouritsen hosted me for a time in Århus, and Alexa Robertson hosted me academically at Stockholms universitet.

I should also like to thank the members of my jury for the time and attention they have devoted to reading my work – in the case of Professors Brink Lund and Hérítier, time granted freely before they or indeed I knew that they would serve on the jury.

Both of my supervisors Alexander Trechsel and Gianpietro Mazzoleni have been wonderfully encouraging and penetrating readers. I doubt I have fully addressed all the points they have made to me, but the fault for that lies with me.

This thesis is dedicated to my parents. I hope that as two students of the law – and hence of Latin locutions – they will believe me when I tell them that their love and support has been very much a *condicio sine qua non*.

Part I

THEORY

INTRODUCTION

In February 2005, the Swedish public broadcaster Sveriges Television (SVT) began running an advertising campaign entitled “Fri Television”. The campaign, which was designed to highlight that SVT’s programming was both free at the point of use and free of political pressure, included clips of Russian President Vladimir Putin and Italian prime minister Silvio Berlusconi, implicitly comparing free SVT with un-free media in other countries.

The campaign provoked strong reactions — not from Swedish viewers, but rather from the Italian government. Sweden’s ambassador to Italy was invited to the Foreign Ministry to explain the situation. At the same time, Italy’s ambassador in Stockholm visited the foreign ministry there in order to make clear Italy’s demand that SVT stay out of “Italian internal affairs”, a request which Moderate party parliamentarian Gustav Fridolin likened to “the demand of a dictatorship”.¹ According to deputy foreign minister Laila Freivalds, the government made it clear to the Italian delegation that the government could in no way interfere with SVT’s output,² and the matter was eventually dropped.

The mutual incomprehension demonstrated during this episode — the Swedish incomprehension that the Berlusconi government would ask the government to intervene and expect it to be successful, and the Italian incomprehension that the Swedes would demonstrate such qualms — suggests that there are differences in Europe when it comes to public media. In some countries, governments habitually bully broadcasters; in others, governments do not.

-
- 1 “Fråga 2004/05:1073 av Gustav Fridolin (mp) till utbildnings- och kulturminister Leif Pagrotsky om vikten av kritiskt granskande medier”, Riksdagen, 24th February 2005.
 - 2 “Svar på frågorna 2004/05:1073 om vikten av kritiskt granskande medier och 1124 om SVT:s kampanj och regeringens utrikespolitik”, Riksdagen, 8th March 2005.

The argument of this thesis is that we can explain these differences in the political independence of public service broadcasters without having to resort to descriptions of Italian irascibility or Swedish stoicism, or indeed any other kind of explanation couched in terms of national character or 'the way things are done here'. 'The way things are done' certainly matters, but these folkways in turn depend on more fundamental characteristics of the polity. In particular, I argue that they depend on two broad factors: the growth and self-regulation of the market for news, and the legal protection given to the public broadcaster. The larger the market for news, the greater the degree of professionalization amongst journalists in general, and amongst broadcasters in the PSB in particular. The greater the degree of professionalization, the more reduced the motive to interfere. The greater the legal protections given to the broadcaster, the more limited the opportunities for interference. And the more reduced the motive, and the more circumscribed the opportunities for interference, the greater the degree of independence.

I demonstrate these claims in two different ways. In the second part of the thesis, I build a linear regression model of PSB independence, and find that the measurements I provide of the two independent variables (legal protection and the size of the market for news) and one additional control variable are statistically significant predictors of independence, whilst other variables (party system polarization and the partisanship of the bureaucracy) are not. At the very least, this multiple correlation does not disconfirm the causal claims about legal protection and the market for news. At best, it corroborates these claims when read in conjunction with the theory provided in the first part of the thesis. It cannot, however, demonstrate that the causal paths which begin with legal protection and the news market are as I have described them, nor that my measurements of these independent variables are valid on their face.

I therefore demonstrate these claims in greater detail by focusing on six public service broadcasters in particular: Rai (Italy); Radio Televisión Española (RTVE, Spain); the British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC, United Kingdom); Radio Telefís Éireann (RTÉ, Republic of Ireland); Sveriges Radio and Sveriges Television (SR and SVT, Sweden), and Danmarks Radio (DR, Denmark), and their associated predecessor organizations. I first focus on three particular aspects of legal protection: board appointments, funding,

and parliamentary questioning. All of these aspects can be quantified with relative ease. The second part of the thesis therefore includes three additional chapters which deal with these aspects statistically.

The advantage of greater focus, however, is that attention can be paid to aspects of legal protection and the development of rules which cannot easily be quantified, but must instead be described in depth and contextualised. The third part of the thesis thus offers comparative histories of these six broadcasters. These six broadcasters are not given equal attention: one broadcaster for each of [Hallin and Mancini's \(2004\)](#) media system types is discussed in greater length: Rai for the Polarized-Pluralist model; the BBC for the Liberal model; and SVT for the Democratic-Corporatist model. These three broadcasters are not intended to be representative of their type, but are rather important in their own right as influential public service broadcasters. Consequently, the chapters dealing with these three broadcasters are longer and include original research. The chapters devoted to RTVE, RTÉ and DR are, by contrast, exclusively based on secondary sources. None of these histories is intended to be comprehensive: the incidents recounted are chosen on the basis of their relevance to the development of content rules within the broadcaster and legal protection. Nor, of course, are they intended to be authoritative: I have benefitted too much from those who have written authoritative histories ([Briggs, 1995b](#), [Hadenius, 1998](#), [Horgan, 2004](#)) to claim so.

The fourth and final part of the thesis summarizes the findings of the comparative histories before asking more general questions about the independence of public service broadcasters. What do my findings imply for efforts to reform public service broadcasters? Are these findings valid in democratizing countries? How do they apply in a context where the traditional mainstay of the market for news, the printed daily newspaper, is in dramatic decline?

In the remainder of this introductory chapter, I set out many of the key terms involved in this work, and give reasons for why I use these terms in the way I do. I first set out what I mean by a public service broadcaster (1.1), and by political independence (1.2). I then say why the political independence of public service broadcasters, as I have defined it, matters (1.3). I briefly discuss existing research on the issue, and summarize existing explanations of PSBs' political independence (1.4).

1.1 WHAT IS A PUBLIC SERVICE BROADCASTER?

Research has concentrated on defining “public service broadcasting” — a property of broadcast content — rather than defining the organizations supposed to produce this content ([The Committee on Financing the BBC, 1986](#), p. 7). Public service broadcasters aim to produce content of this kind, but this aim is only part of what defines them. Accordingly, by ‘public service broadcaster’ (PSB), I mean a broadcaster:

- which is funded in large part by the state through general taxation revenue or a special hypothecated tax (licence fee)
- which principally broadcasts to residents of the same state which funds it,
- where the highest posts in the broadcaster are appointed by state organs, and
- which has as a stated *aim* the provision of a broad range of content which is socially useful

First, PSBs should be distinguished from official external services such as the BBC World Service or surrogate domestic services like Radio Free Europe or Radio Marti ([Head, 1985](#), pp. 342-365), as per the second item in the definition. Whilst PSBs may also direct services abroad, services which specialise in such broadcasts face difficulties of their own which may not be representative of public broadcasters in general.³

Second, the criteria that PSB executives be appointed by state organs and that they be financed in significant part by the state are criteria which are particularly suited for this investigation, and may not be suited for more general uses. Three broadcasters in the countries studied here — ITV and Channel 4 in the United Kingdom and TV2 in Denmark — are sometimes described as public service broadcasters despite being either funded by own resources or by not having state-appointed board members.⁴ The motive for describing them as public service broadcasters is presumably that they too aim to broadcast programs which are a service to the public in the way outlined above, and are required

³ See [Sigelman \(2009\)](#) for the US case.

⁴ For the UK, see Lords Hansard text for the 28th April 2008, col. 255. TV2 in Denmark was until 2005 financed by limited state subventions ([Hanretty, 2007a](#)).

to do so by legislation. Yet attempting to define public service broadcasters by their programme obligations would be extremely difficult given cross-country variation in program obligations and their detail. There is also a strong pragmatic reason for not considering them as public service broadcasters: absent state funding or state appointments, there is less presumption of political dependence.

Scope conditions and units of analysis

Not everything which satisfies the above definition is considered in this thesis. Three qualifications are necessary.

The first qualification is a scope condition: in this thesis I restrict my analysis to broadcasters operating in democratic countries. This is a useful restriction: it is not interesting to investigate why broadcasters in non-democratic countries are not independent: should a broadcaster in a non-democratic state somehow achieve independence, there is no reason to suppose that it would become independent by the same means as PSBs in democracies. In English, this condition is implied by the use of the term ‘public broadcaster’ in contrast to ‘state broadcaster’, often used to refer to broadcasters operating in non-democratic regimes.

The second qualification concerns the level of analysis. With two exceptions — the Belgian broadcasters RTBF and VRT, which were formerly the same national broadcaster — I consider only *national* public service broadcasters. Whilst additionally studying sub-national PSBs might result in a larger number of cases, the added value of such cases might be limited if, as is the case with the German regional public broadcasters, the sub-national broadcasters operate within a normative and/or economic framework set at national level either by parent organizations or by framework legislation.

The third qualification concerns the difference between public service broadcasters in individual countries (cases) and units of analysis. More specifically, broadcasters which have, over time, displayed significantly different values of one of the independent variables (legal protection) were treated as separate units of analysis. Thus, the *Office de Radiodiffusion Télévision Française* (1964 — 1974), *France Télévisions* (1974 — 1986) and *France Télévisions* after the *loi Leotard*

(1986 — present) are treated as three separate units of analysis.⁵

This qualification can be challenged, since it may violate the assumptions of causal homogeneity and independence of observations which are made in the statistical analysis in ch. 3.

The assumption of causal homogeneity — namely, that “all units with the same value of the explanatory variables have the same expected value of the dependent variable” (King *et al.*, 1994, p. 91) — may be violated when two units are compared which are exactly alike in all respects except that one is a time-slice of a given case, one is not. To use an example: suppose that journalistic professionalization is a resource which accumulates in value over time, just like interest in a bank; but that this interest is hidden from the account holder until he or she decides to make a withdrawal from the account - say, when a politician threatens to interfere. If we take a case and split it at time t_1 , and measure its level of journalistic professionalization for both of the resulting units, we would, *ex hypothesi*, only be able to see the original “capital stock” of journalistic professionalization invested at t_0 ; yet this stock may have accrued interest. If the other unit, which is not a subset of a case, has the same amount of original capital stock, we would mistakenly be assuming that these units have “the same value of the explanatory variable” and thus should have “the same expected value of the dependent variable”. Independence of observations is certainly violated, since for any two units which are temporal slices of a larger case, it is not true that “the value of a particular variable is not influenced by its value in other observations and therefore provides new information about the phenomenon in question” (King *et al.*, 1994, p. 231).

How serious are these problems? Violation of independence of observations is a smaller problem for, as Collier *et al.* (2004, p. 31) note, failure of the assumption of “independence of observations... does not necessarily bias the causal inference [but] increas[es] the variance associated with an inference”. Violation of causal homogeneity is

⁵ I use “case” to refer to the nation-states studied herein. Sweden and Italy are therefore cases. “Unit of analysis” is a theoretical category: Radiotjänst and Sveriges Television are thus two units of analysis. This is close to position 2 on the conceptual map given by Ragin and Becker (1992, p. 9).

more serious, but is tempered by the comparative historical analysis which is provided in the third part of this thesis. As I described it above, the problem of causal heterogeneity arose because not all information about the levels of the explanatory variables could be captured at the moment when the two units are divided. This would be a genuine problem if all of our information about the levels of these explanatory variables came from the necessarily crude quantitative operationalizations given in the second part of this thesis; yet since the third part of the thesis includes more detailed assessments of the levels of the explanatory variables over time, we can see (particularly in the chapters concerning Italy and Denmark) whether broadcasters are in fact strongly influenced by their previous legal incarnations. To anticipate the findings of these chapters, it seems that behaviour within these broadcasters differs markedly between different periods.

Table 1.1 therefore presents a list of forty-nine PSBs subdivided, where appropriate, into further units of analysis.⁶ The list includes public service television networks, public service radio networks, and joint radio and television broadcasters. The vast majority — thirty-nine — are from Europe; four from the Americas and Asia respectively, and two from Oceania.

Case selection

Table 1.1 lists the relevant *population* for this research. This thesis examines two separate *samples* of this population.

The first sample is a large-N sample of 36 units of analysis: these broadcasters are listed in full on p. 60. This sample is an availability sample of the entire population. PSBs were excluded if there was no available information on legal protection or for my proxy measure of independence. This sampling is likely to under-estimate the number of PSBs with low independence: the PSBs of two important European countries (Greece and Turkey) were excluded although both broadcasters are known for their limited political independence: numerous government changes in Turkey have been followed by a change in the Director-General of TRT, and Directors-General of ERT in Greece had,

⁶ Sources used include Sinclair (1999), European Broadcasting Union (2004), and Quick (2003).

Table 1.1: List of national public service broadcasters

Country	PSB	Abbreviation	Periodicization
Argentina	Canal 7 Argentina	C7	
Australia	Australian Broadcasting Corporation	ABC	
Austria	Österreichischer Rundfunk	ORF	
Belgium	Vlaamse Radio- en Televisieomroep	VRT	
Belgium	Radio-Télévision Belge de la Communauté française	RTBF	
Bulgaria	Bългарска Nationalna Televizija	BNT	
Bulgaria	Bългарско Nationalno Radio	BNR	
Canada	Canadian Broadcasting Corporation	CBC	
Chile	Television Nacional	TN	
Croatia	Hrvatska Radiotelevizija	HRT	
Cyprus	Cyprus Broadcasting Corporation	CY/CBC	
Czech Rep	Ceská Televize	CT	
Czech Rep	Cesky Rozhlas	CR	
Denmark	Danmarks Radio	DR	
Estonia	Eesti Televisioon	EE/ETV	
Estonia	Eesti Raadio	EE/ER	
Finland	Oy Yleisradio	YLE	
France	France Television	FT	1964 - 74; 1974 - 86; 1986 -
Germany	Zweites Deutsches Fernsehen	ZDF	
Greece	Elliniki Radiophonia - Tileorassi SA	ERT	
Hungary	Magyar Radio	HU/MR	
Hungary	Magyar Televizio	HU/MTV	
Iceland	Ríkisútvarpið	RUV	
India	Prasar Bharati	BCI	
Ireland	Radio Telefís Éireann	RTE	
Israel	Israel Broadcasting Authority	IBA	
Italy	Radiotelevisione Italiana	RAI	1948 - 1975; 1975 - 1993; 1993 - 2004; 2005 -
Japan	Nippon Hōsō Kyōkai	NHK	
Korea	Korean Broadcasting Service	KBS	
Latvia	Latvijas Valsts Televizija	LT	
Lithuania	Lietuvos Radijas ir Televizija	LRT	
Malta	Public Broadcasting Services Ltd	PBS	
Netherlands	Nederlandse Omroep Stichting	NPB	
New Zealand	Television New Zealand	TVNZ	
Norway	Norrikskringskasting	NRK	
Poland	Polskie Radio SA	PR	
Poland	Telewizja Polska	TVP	
Portugal	Radiotelevisão Portuguesa SA	RTP	
Romania	Societatea Româna de Televiziune	RO/TVR	
Serbia & Montenegro	Radiotelevizija Srbije	RTS	
Slovakia	Slovenská Televizia	SK/STV	
Slovakia	Slovensky Rozhlas	SK/SR	
Slovenia	Radiotelevizija Slovenija	RTVSLO	
South Africa	South Africa Broadcasting Corporation	SABC	
Spain	Television Española SA	TVE	
Sweden	Sveriges Television Ab	SVT	
Sweden	Sveriges Radio Ab	SR	
Switzerland	SRG SSR idée suisse	SRG-SSR	
UK	British Broadcasting Corporation	BBC	

during the eighties, an average turnover of eight months (Chondroleou, 2001).

The second sample is a small-N sample of six PSBs from Italy, Spain, the United Kingdom, Ireland, Sweden and Denmark. The sample was chosen for a number of reasons. First, this sample is a sub-set of the large-N sample. The predicted and actual values of independence given in chapter 3 can thus be revisited in greater depth: where predicted independence diverges from actual independence, the small-N analysis can examine whether the reasons for this divergence are idiosyncratic or whether they suggest a revision of the theory. Where predicted and actual independence converge, the small-N analysis can examine whether the causal paths suggested by the theory did, in fact, operate. Second, there are good reasons for thinking that these broadcasters differ in the size of the market for news in their respective countries, and that they consequently differ in the development of rules within the broadcaster. Third, these broadcasters represent the three types of media system identified by Hallin and Mancini (2004) (the Polarized Pluralist, Liberal, and Democratic-Corporatist types), with two broadcasters from each type. My case selection is therefore linked to previous research.

This kind of nested analysis (Lieberman, 2005), where a large-N statistical analysis is followed by small-N comparative historical analysis of a subset of cases, allows for explanations which are both convincing and efficient. Historical analysis - and in particular the use of narrative - makes it difficult to (1) dismiss a wide range of competing explanations given time-constraints (2) assess effect magnitudes, and (3) deal with social processes which are “big, slow-moving, and invisible”, in Pierson’s (2003) wonderful phrase. All of these can be more easily achieved by statistical analysis, yet this method also has its problems. “Given the potential for endogeneity and poor data in statistical analyses carried out at the country level of analysis, statistical results alone rarely provide sufficient evidence. . . . Almost inevitably, strong questions arise about causal order, heterogeneity of cases, and the quality of measurement. [Small-N analyses] provides an important opportunity to counter such charges” (Lieberman, 2005, p. 442).

1.2 WHAT IS POLITICAL INDEPENDENCE?

PSBs are not independent *in se*, but rather independent *from* some source of pressure. In this thesis, I examine political independence, understood as independence from politicians and their actions. By political independence, I mean

- the degree to which PSB employees take day-to-day decisions about their output or the output of subordinates, without
- receiving and acting on the basis of instructions, threats, or other inducement from politicians, or the anticipation thereof;
- or considering whether the interests of those politicians would be harmed by particular choices about output.

I use 'interference' and 'intervention' to describe threats or inducements from politicians which cause or attempt to cause PSB employees to act in a particular fashion.

Independence is related to, but different from, political *pressure*. The absence of pressure is a sufficient condition for independence, but not a necessary one. The fact that pressure exists, and is strong, does not necessarily mean that the broadcaster is not independent. Where the broadcaster successfully resists such pressure, its independence may not be impaired; indeed, it may be strengthened by the process, as the repeated use of organizational rules designed to govern complaints by politicians imbues those rules with greater value.

Of course, repeated pressure imposes a psychological burden on its target. It would be natural if, in an effort to avoid such burdens, broadcasters acquiesced to such pressure. Conversely, repeated failure to pressure the broadcaster causes politicians to reconsider the use of such pressure. Thus, high levels of pressure may ultimately cause low levels of independence, and high levels of independence may cause low levels of pressure - but it is important to keep the two distinct at the theoretical level.

Independence does not entail an absence of political bias or impartiality. Left-wing journalists and managers may produce 'left-wing output', without being asked to do so

by parties of the left, and vice-versa. However, the theory described in chapter 2 suggests that managers' best strategy for achieving independence is to minimise the perception of such bias. Indeed, it is difficult to imagine that politicians would long tolerate a partial public broadcaster.

I use political independence instead of more specific terms which refer to the source of political interference. Humphreys (1996, pp. 155-8) distinguishes between 'government' and 'proportional' or 'parliamentary' models of public broadcasting. In the former, the independence of the broadcaster is limited by the government; in the latter, by most or all of the parties represented in parliament. The *empirical* relevance of this distinction has faded with the decrease in 'proportional' cases: the proportional logic of the Italian polity has been undermined by systemic (and ongoing) political reform, and the formerly proportional Belgian broadcaster has been profoundly transformed by its split into separate Flemish and Walloon broadcasters (Burgelman, 1989, Erk, 2003). Its *normative* relevance has also faded: if links between the broadcasting system and the party system were justifiable when political parties acted as transmission belts between civil society and the state, it is less justifiable in an era where political parties are partly extraneous to civil society (Katz and Mair, 1995, p. 11; see also Manin, 1997, pp. 218 - 221 on 'audience democracy'). Finally, the *causal* relevance of the distinction is unclear: if the theories of independence below are correct, then they should pre-empt both 'government' and 'parliamentary' interference.

1.3 WHY DOES THIS MATTER?

What does it matter whether PSBs are politically independent or not? I argue that the issue of PSB independence matters because it is normatively desirable insofar as it contributes to democracy, and because it does in fact matter to people and to politicians in several countries where PSBs have low independence.

Although they provide many other types of content, public service broadcasters are noted for providing news and current affairs programming. This content provides a source of information for evaluating the alternatives put to us in competitive elections. It is not, nor was it ever, the only

source of such information: even when PSBs had monopolies over radio and television broadcasting, newspapers and current affairs magazines were also widely used sources of information. However, PSBs are a particularly important source of information: Eurobarometer studies show that television is the most commonly cited source of information pertaining to the EU. In the television market, PSBs typically enjoy dominant positions (Picard, 2002); increased media competition has not diminished their share (see data in European Audiovisual Observatory, 2002, 2006).

Consequently, where PSBs exist, they contribute to the presence of alternative sources of information, which is a requirement for democracy (Dahl, 1971, pp. 2-3). Coppedge and Reinicke use “partiality in and greater availability of government-controlled media” (1991, p. 50, emphasis added) as an indicator of the lack of “alternative sources of information”, thus impairing voters’ ability to choose between electoral alternatives. If PSB independence were solely a matter of independence from government, this would justify our interest in it. Yet PSB independence also concerns independence from parties and politicians more generally, and interference by elected politicians *in general* also impairs voters’ ability to choose between alternatives, since it is one of the means by which cartel parties protect themselves against political insurgents not currently represented in a legislature (Bischoff, 2006, pp. 112, 117).

Since we normally judge democracy to be normatively desirable, there is therefore a strong presumption that whatever makes possible democracy’s realization is also normatively desirable. The political independence of PSBs is thus desirable in this light.

Independence in this sense is also desired, at least by policymakers. The abortive 2007 reform of Rai sought specifically to grant it autonomy “from the parties”, not just from the government (Gentiloni, 2007, 2.6). The expression of this desire may have been a form of lip-service, but even lip-service shows that independence from parties is thought to be a good thing.

(There are, of course, other reasons why political independence might be thought to matter normatively or practically. One reason for wishing PSBs to be politically independent is that PSBs which succeed in securing political independence

also succeed in other aspects, such as producing quality programming. Comparative assessment of programme quality would, however, be extremely taxing).

Why do other things matter less?

The choice to focus on political independence as I have (narrowly) defined it comes at the cost of excluding other potential desiderata. Why does political independence, narrowly conceived, matter more than broad political independence, or independence from powerful economic interests?

First, broader understandings of political independence would blur the line between political interference in the broadcaster, which we commonly see as undesirable since it harms our ability to evaluate electoral alternatives, and accountability and goal-setting relationships which we see as permissible. State-broadcaster agreements often require the latter to offer specified amounts of particular types of content, or to refrain from broadcasting harmful or hateful material. Whilst [Coppens and Saeys \(2006\)](#) have argued that these kinds of agreements represent a potential threat to the over-all independence of the broadcaster, they never claim that such agreements *constitute* low independence; whilst they may *contribute* to low independence, this relation is accounted for in my index of legal protection, discussed on page [65](#).

What about economic independence? Habermasian and Marxist defences of public service broadcasting have been built on the ability and desirability of PSBs to embody "a set of properly political values [which] both requires and fosters a set of social relations, distinct from and opposed to economic values and relations" present in the market ([Garnham and Inglis, 1990](#), p. 111). If PSB content were dictated by economic interests, this would be concerning. But economic interests are often more diffuse and potentially contradictory than political interests of governments. For example, the absence of advertising from many public service broadcasters has been lauded by [Garnham and Inglis \(1990, pp. 124-5\)](#) for avoiding the "class stratification of cultural consumption"; it is therefore inimical to capitalistic interests. However, the ban on advertising was, in a number of countries, the product of demands from a

particular group of capitalists, namely owners of newspapers who feared greater competition for advertising revenue (Hadenius, 1998, p. 22).

Political independence narrowly conceived thus matters more than other, related types of independence. What of other values which may compete with independence, such as values of openness and accountability? Although I have argued that the political independence of PSBs matters because it is normatively desirable, it is only normatively desirable insofar as we value democracy; it need not be normatively desirable 'all things considered'. Practices which are necessary in order to secure valuable political independence may damage other values which we also hold. On balance, we may judge the damage to these other values to be of greater consequence than the benefits in terms of political independence. Garnham and Inglis (1990, pp. 131–2) suggest the existence of such a conflict when they write about the BBC, which has

"always organized its staff on highly hierarchical lines influenced both by military thinking and by class distinction... [has] continually rebuffed moves among broadcasters for greater worker participation... [imposed] heavy-handed censorship... has totally failed to respond to calls made to it by both the public and by broadcasting workers to forge a more participatory, collaborative and democratic relationship which might truly serve the public by expressing their political and cultural diversity rather than serve the state and associated power elites by transmitting an elitist, authoritarian and manipulative political and cultural message" (Garnham and Inglis, 1990, pp. 131-2)

'Heavy-handed censorship' may be a description of the introduction of new rules on content (the Producers' Guidelines) in the early 80s, when Garnham and Inglis were writing. Moves for greater worker participation were acknowledged in Sveriges Radio – but led to capture by the radical left and consequent government reorganisation of the broadcaster. Finally, given Garnham's membership in the Standing Committee on Broadcasting (Freedman, 2001, p. 199), a more "democratic relationship" may involve parliamentary nomination of PSB board members of the kind

tried in Italy in 1975 – which, as chapter 4 will show, is hardly a model to emulate.

If Garnham and Inglis have correctly identified undesirable traits in the BBC, and if they correspond to the strategies that I shall argue broadcasters use to protect their independence, then there seems to be a partial conflict between independence and other values. A politically independent PSB might perforce be a hierarchical, arrogant, self-possessed and swaggering institution. However, even were this conflict shown also to exist in other countries, we would still have to judge whether this price of securing independence was worth decreases in egalitarianism and humbleness in the broadcaster. Since the BBC is traditionally accorded great respect by other public service broadcasters, and is often called on to give advice to public broadcasters in democratizing countries, it seems that a number of other broadcasters believe that this price is worth paying.

1.4 WHAT EXPLANATIONS EXIST ALREADY?

Surprisingly little comparative work has been written about the politics of public broadcasting. Whilst there are a number of comparative works which deal with public service broadcasting — including many jeremiads lamenting its death (Tracey, 1998) — only a few (Etzioni-Halevy, 1987, Qualter, 1962, Smith and Ortmark, 1979) deal with the comparative politics of public service broadcasting. Different reasons can be given for this lack of scholarly interest. American social scientists (the most numerous kind — Goodin and Klingemann, 1998) may ignore public broadcasting because it has negligible impact there. European social scientists may be distracted by non-political but European developments, such as the European Union's attitude towards PSB as a potentially market-distorting form of state aid (Wheeler, 2004). Media scholars in general tend to concentrate either on the macro- (global) or micro-levels, ignoring the meso-level of comparative study of nation-states and their media.

Correspondingly, there are few factors which have been cited as explaining the degree of political independence of public service broadcasters. In this section, I discuss four factors which have been mentioned in previous research:

bureaucratic partisanship, party system polarization, corruption and the rule of law, and public involvement.

1.4.1 *Bureaucratic partisanship*

The one factor which has been cited in a comparative work on PSB is the partisanship of the bureaucracy. “Since a public national broadcasting corporation exists in the same normative framework and in the same political arena as the government bureaucracy, it is likely to have some features in common with it”. [Etzioni-Halevy \(1987, pp. 8-9\)](#) hypothesises that “countries that have party-politicised bureaucracies are also more likely to have party-politicised public broadcasting corporations as compared with other countries where the bureaucracies have become largely non-partisan”.

Suppose that, subsequent to the establishment of a public broadcaster, politicians engage in a search for appropriate models to guide their behaviour towards the broadcaster, using an availability heuristic ([Kahneman and Tversky, 1982](#)). Given that PSBs in certain respects resemble government departments more than corporations, politicians may use the same model that they use to govern their relationships with bureaucrats in their subsequent relationship with broadcasters. Where the model of politician-bureaucrat relations involves party-politicisation, politicians will be used to giving partisan orders to bureaucrats, and will subsequently give such orders to broadcasters (and will expect them to be carried out). Where instead the model of politician-bureaucrat relations involves “professionalized” bureaucracy, politicians will be used to having bureaucrats disallow certain orders as incompatible with basic norms of professional conduct, and will thus not make partisan requests of broadcasters, and/or will accept broadcasters rebuffing such requests.

Conversely, the broadcaster might adopt the model of behaviour found in the bureaucracy. [Tjernström \(2000\)](#) argues that, in its early years, Radiotjänst modelled itself on the Swedish *Telegrafstyrelse*, a quasi-state institution which ran Radiotjänst’s distribution network. It is plausible to see this imitation as a source of independence, insofar as Radiotjänst was able to cultivate a bureaucratic coalition to prevent nationalization ([Hadenius, 1998, pp. 46–47](#)).

Unfortunately for this argument, [Etzioni-Halevy \(1987\)](#) found no support for the general hypothesis in her study of four PSBs (the BBC, the Australian Broadcasting Corporation, the Israeli Broadcasting Authority, and the German ARD).

1.4.2 *Party system polarization*

[Hallin and Mancini](#) claim that there is a link between polarized pluralism and greater “political parallelism and instrumentalization”. This is because “the notion of politically neutral journalism is less plausible where a wide range of competing world views contend” (2004, p. 61). Their view is echoed by PSB journalists and managers. Rai’s London correspondent wrote that,

“[w]hereas in Britain, the existing agreement of ‘90% of the people on 90% of the issues’ (Sir Winston Churchill’s figures) leaves ample scope to ‘non-controversial’ political broadcasts, the disagreement between government and pro-Communist opposition runs deep to the foundations of the national constitution which makes it very difficult, and often impossible, to plead absolute impartiality” ([Orlando, 1954](#))

Or, again, for Giovanni Cesareo and other Marxist commentators:

“In truth, equidistance is a sheer abstraction in a society divided into opposing classes... In this situation one cannot help but stand for one of the two sides: it is for this reason that ‘objectivity’ and ‘impartiality’ are only masks of the domination of those who are in power.” ([Cesareo, 1970](#), p. 132)

The sentiment is not restricted to Italy. Oliver Whitley, chief assistant to the BBC Director-General, claimed that

“the nation divided always has the BBC on the rack” (quoted in [Briggs, 1979](#), ch. 1)

Nevertheless, there remain many problems with this explanation. First, it is not clear precisely what kind of polarization is required. Mancini and Hallin refer not to

polarization *per se* but to polarized pluralism, a type of party system defined by a number of variables (including prolonged periods of government by the same party or same set of parties, which may have its own effects on independence). Second, certain measures of polarization which concentrate on manifesto policy proposals suggest that there were *low* levels of polarization in Italy (author's calculations using data from [Budge et al. \(2001\)](#) according to the method laid out in [Sigelman and Yough \(1978\)](#); cf. [Evans \(2002, pp. 168-169\)](#)). Third, it is not obvious that the argument holds outside two polar cases of Great Britain (at least during the period of Butskellite consensus) and Italy. Finland has often been cited as a case of polarization (and polarized pluralism), but Finnish broadcaster YLE does not show the same levels of political dependence as Rai ([Raunio and Wiberg, 2003](#); [Evans, 2002, p. 162](#)). Fourth, Mancini and Hallin are extremely charitable in interpreting which countries share the characteristics of polarized pluralism, given that they "apply it to countries such as Spain and Portugal, which had a form of polarized pluralism only during brief periods of democracy early in the twentieth century" ([Hallin and Mancini, 2004, p. 61](#)). Fifth, the explanation may hold within countries across *time*, but not across *countries*. Thus, points of great conflict between government and broadcaster may occur in times of national polarization, but these may be fluctuations around a baseline level of conflict or independence which has little or nothing to do with polarization.

1.4.3 *Corruption and the rule of law*

When, in the nineteen-sixties, the first serious parliamentary debates on reform of Rai took place, one senator (Jaures Busoni) struck a cautionary note: whatever law might be adopted, it would be unlikely to achieve its objectives in Italy, "even laws inspired by democratic principles, laying down democratic norms, risk not being observed, since we [in Italy] have no tradition of democratic life" ([Camera dei Deputati, 1961](#)). Where the rule of law is not well-established, legal norms which set out to guarantee independence may not secure such independence. Thus, corruption and the lack of rule of law should be negatively associated with independence. Whether these variables are genuine independent variables, or merely condition variables on the

degree of legal protection, is unclear: for Senator Busoni, even laws which gave limited legal protection, such as those governing the BBC, were capable of guaranteeing independence, thus suggesting that the independent influence of the level of legal protection would be low, and the effect of corruption alone would be dominant.

1.4.4 *The role of the public*

In his classic study of the Tennessee Valley Authority, Philip Selznick (1966) demonstrated how that authority protected itself from other over-powering federal agencies by co-opting the grass-roots. The Tennessee Valley Authority's grass-roots were better organized than the amorphous audience of the PSB, but there remains a sense in which the independence of the public broadcaster can be preserved by mobilizing the public in the same way. Should the broadcaster be subject to political interference, the broadcaster could mobilize public outrage in order to force the politicians to back down.

However, it is not obvious either that interference in the broadcaster need be visible to the public, or that the public should value the independence of the broadcaster over other benefits. Attempts to interfere may be made at a relatively dry, institutional level - as Sveriges Radio's director-general Olof Rydbeck noted,

“One could hardly ‘mobilise the storm troopers’ - SR certainly had millions of listeners and viewers, but they were totally uninterested in SR as an institution” (Thurén, 1997, p. 110).

Conversely, where interference has been overt and particular, public outrage has often been lacking. This is the case in Italy, where those movements which have protested most strongly against Berlusconi's interference in Rai – the so-called *girotondisti* – have been movements of limited breadth recruited principally from the middle classes, and particularly from academic and cultural *milieux*. The role of the public in this thesis is therefore fairly limited.

1.5 THE OUTLINE OF THE THESIS

In this introductory chapter, I have very briefly stated the key claims of the thesis, and defined some of the key terms involved — namely, ‘public service broadcaster’ and ‘political independence’. I have explained why these claims are novel, and what debts they owe to previous literature — and most importantly, why they matter at all. Finally, I have noted some rival explanations of the independence of PSBs which have been found in previous literature.

These rival explanations will be tested in chapter 3, along with the twin explanations in terms of the size of the market for news and the degree of legal protection. This chapter will also operationalize all of these variables, assigning values for political independence, bureaucratic partisanship, party system polarization, legal protection, and the size of the market for news, to the 36 broadcasters for which sufficient data is available.

Before these explanations can be tested, however, more must be said about the logic behind the claims they make. Just why should a larger media market lead to the public service broadcaster developing rules governing content? Why should the adoption of such rules aid independence? And what kind of legal provisions constitute legal ‘protection’? These questions are the concern of chapter 2, which provides a theory of PSB independence.

A THEORY OF PUBLIC BROADCASTER INDEPENDENCE

In the preceding chapter I stated that the degree of legal protection given to a public service broadcaster and the size of the market for news determine how independent it is, and that the size of the market for news affects independence through its effects on the development of rules for broadcast content. I also stated that these two factors are multiply correlated with political independence as I measure it. Between claim (chapter 1) and correlation (chapter 3) comes theory — a set of internally consistent statements including definitions, assumptions, and statements about causality — which can entail novel potentially falsifiable statements about the world, whether they be predictive or retrodictive. This chapter attempts to provide that theory.

There are three types of actors who play roles in the theory: politicians, journalists, and managers. I start by describing the motivations of politicians (2.1), before moving on to discuss journalists (2.2) and managers (2.4). After discussing the actors involved, I move on to a discussion of types of intervention in the broadcaster (2.5), and how the size of the market for news gives managers tools for defusing and defeating such intervention (2.8). I close by stating these claims as hypotheses and listing them alongside the rival hypotheses discussed in the preceding chapter.

2.1 POLITICIANS

By politicians, I mean individuals who hold elected office, typically, but not exclusively, at national level. Only these individuals have both the necessary interest in intervening in the work of the PSB and the necessary rights to intervene

in the PSB through effective measures. Non-elected individuals, such as party press officers, also intervene in PSBs, but I assume that they act on behalf of politicians.

Politicians have positions in some n -dimensional space which they prefer to all other positions in that space, and prefer positions which are closer to their position to positions which are further from their position. We are usually familiar with these n -dimensional spaces in our respective polities. A common space has two axes, one which runs between left and right-wing political positions, and another which runs between authoritarian and libertarian political positions. Call a politician's position in n -dimensional space their *ideal point*. This ideal point is set *ex ante*.

Most politicians are vote-seekers, and act purposefully so as to maximise or satisfice their vote share, given their ideal point. That is, they choose from the set of possible actions that action which will result in the greatest additional number of votes won. By implication, politicians do not act vis-à-vis a broadcaster because they are angry, or because they just feel like it. As vote-seekers, politicians are only interested in the PSB insofar as it actually effects, or is perceived to effect, their share of votes.

Some politicians seem to be pure policy-seekers, and act towards the broadcaster so as to give expression to their views on the ideal polity. This is often the case with right-wing parties espousing traditional moral values. Criticism of the broadcaster based on such values often seems like an unadulterated expression of the politician's policy position: often, however, such stances are additionally very popular amongst the party's core support group. It therefore may resemble vote-seeking behaviour in effect, if not in intention. In any case, the following arguments about independence hold whether politicians seek votes or policy.

Of the variety of types of output produced by public broadcasters, news and current affairs is the category most obviously linked to politics and thereby to voting. Hereafter when I talk about 'broadcast output', I refer exclusively to news and current affairs. Other types of output, including comedy and drama, are 'political', and do have an impact on politics (Baumgartner and Morris, 2006), but I leave them out in the name of parsimony.

Broadcast output, understood in this sense, *actually* affects vote shares. In the United States, DellaVigna and Kaplan

(2007) showed that the introduction of Fox News into certain media markets caused an increase of between 0.4 and 0.7% in the share of votes won by Republican candidates. In Italy, Sani and Legnante (2001) have shown very strong associations between Rai and Mediaset viewership and voting for the centre-left and centre-right respectively.

Irrespective of the truth or falsity of these findings, broadcast output is *perceived* to affect vote shares. This is particularly true for politicians, who typically over-estimate the impact of the media relative to the general population and relative to academic skepticism about the direct relationship between media and votes (Johansson, 2004; Krauss, 1998, p. 681). Thus, politicians will be interested in broadcasters like PSBs which are less obviously influential than Fox News or Mediaset are often claimed to be.

Broadcast output can be mapped onto the same n -dimensional political space that politicians inhabit. That is, for the example political space mentioned above, there is such a thing as more right-wing content or more left-wing content, more authoritarian content or more libertarian content. Attempts have been made to map newspaper (Ho and Quinn, 2008) and television (Groseclose and Milyo, 2005) output onto a common political space with moderate success, but it seems entirely plausible to imagine that broadcast output can be informally mapped onto some political space⁷ and that politicians do in fact map content in this way.

If one grants that broadcast output can be mapped in this way, then one can also readily grant that broadcast output which is close to the ideal point of a certain politician or group of politicians, increases the vote-share for that politician or group of politicians, other things being equal. That is, left-wing content translates to votes for the left wing.⁸

7 Indeed as Ho and Quinn (2008) noted in an earlier version of their paper, their method is similar to “the judgment a reader would form about the politics of a newspaper if she were to read all editorials of 23 newspapers” in their study.

8 It is possible to think of counter-examples to this assumption: if broadcast output were consistently close to a certain ideal point in political space irrespective of the flow of events (see below), then that broadcaster might lose credibility entirely, and would thus be entirely discounted by voters and not lead to an increase in votes. This counter-example, however, is drastic, and would require a degree of control over the broadcaster which is not seen in any of the broadcasters studied here.

From the above statements about the effects of output and politicians' motivations, it follows that politicians act towards the PSB so as to move the output it produces closer to their ideal point. Unfortunately for politicians, they cannot unilaterally move PSB output closer to their ideal point. Three factors intervene: events, the decisions taken by journalists about those events, and the decisions taken by management about those journalists.

By events, I mean things that happen in the real world that have some connection to politics, and which serve as the input for any kind of news production process. Examples of events, from most dramatic to least dramatic, include elections, cabinet reshuffles, political scandals, passage of legislation, reports on economic conditions, reports on social conditions, and so on. There is a steady stream of events, and these events can be more or less favourable for an individual politician or group of politicians.

We normally have expectations about the kind of broadcast output that will result from a given event, and how that output will be located in political space. If some event happens which we naïvely think will reflect badly on the government and will reflect well on the principal opposition party — for example, if the government is forced to abandon a new policy and revert to an old policy introduced by the opposition when in government — then it seems likely that the content produced from this event will be closer to the opposition's ideal point than the government's (assuming, of course, that content can be mapped in this way).

Politicians are no different: they too have expectations about content. These expectations are not wishful thinking: that is, they are not systematically *biased* by the desires of the politician in question. By bias, I mean bias away from the kind of content which would be produced by an ideal observer in the sense given by Roderick Firth, as a spectator who is "omniscient, omniperceptive, disinterested, and dispassionate" (Raphael, 1973, p. 44) and who, one supposes, has unlimited newsprint or screen-time to fill. When I say that events 'have' a location in political space, I mean that an ideal observer would produce content which can be mapped to this point if given this event as input. Call the space that each event 'has' *E*. Thus, when I say that politician's expectations are not wishful thinking, I mean that politician's expectations are systematically related to *E*. These expectations are, however, prone to error because of

lack of information or sympathy for the other side. Their expectations may thus diverge from the event's position in political space.

From the description given above, it might seem that the figure of the ideal observer produces the kind of "objective" output which has widely been derided as psychologically and practically impossible. This kind of output may indeed be impossible, and consequently the ideal observer may be chimeric, but it is a useful chimera, since it helps focus attention on what does matter, namely that we commonly believe we can recognize "a deviation from an unattainable but theoretically conceivable condition of unbiased" (Williams, 1975, p. 191).

2.2 JOURNALISTS

There are such things as journalists: machines for turning events into broadcast content. Here I am only concerned with those journalists who work within the PSB: the broader set of journalists in a given society is dealt with in section 2.9.

There are two ideal types of journalists: partisan journalists and non-partisan journalists. Distinguishing between different types of journalists on the basis of their job orientation is a well-established tradition in media research, and a number of typologies have been produced. The number of types in these typologies is not always the same. The key distinction I wish to make here is similar to Donsbach and Patterson's (2004, p. 265) distinction between the "neutral journalist... who does not routinely and consistently take sides in partisan or policy disputes [and] the advocate journalist [who] takes sides and does so in a consistent, substantial and aggressive way".

Partisan journalists have ideal points in the same n -dimensional political space inhabited by politicians, though they need not be the same ideal points as any particular politician. By saying this, I do not mean to imply that non-partisan journalists do not have ideal points in the same n -dimensional space, only that these ideal points are not relevant. After all, journalists are, by the nature of their job, heavily involved

in and interested by public life. It would consequently be abnormal if they did not have some policy preferences.⁹

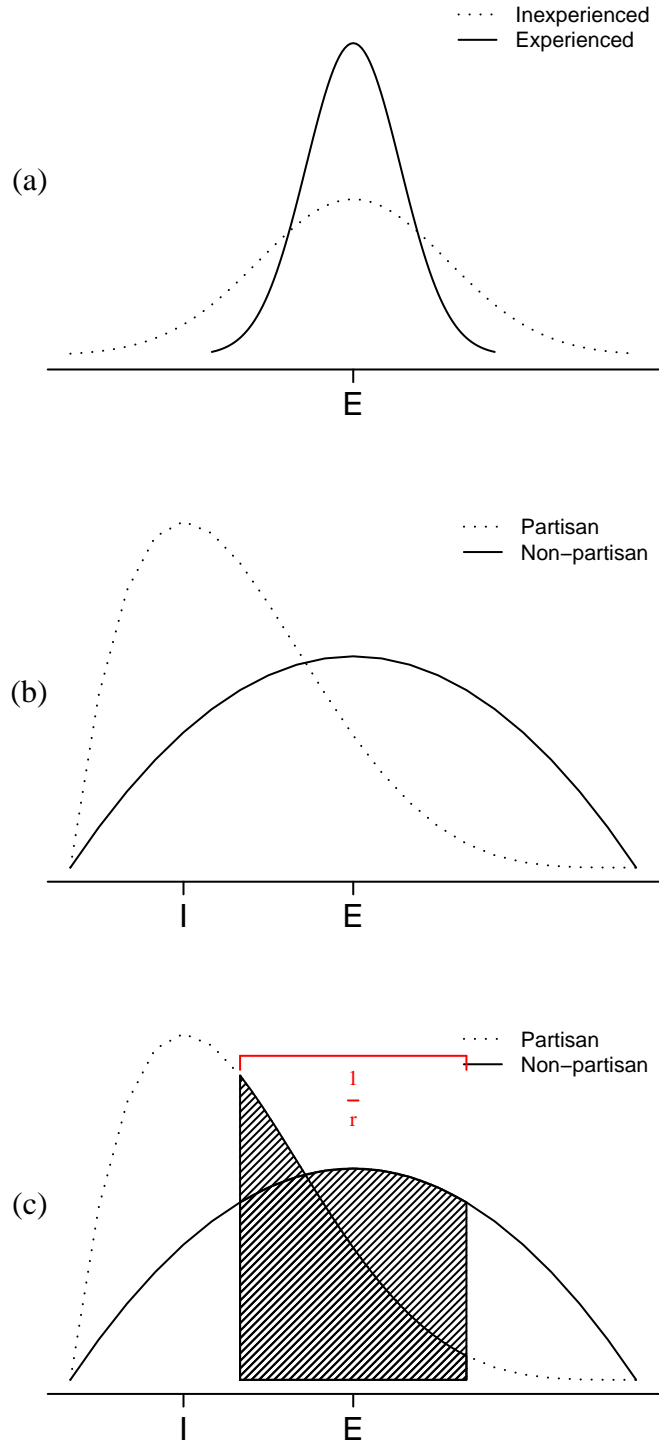
We can think of journalists as having production functions which turn events into output. These production functions differ according to the type of journalist. For *non-partisan* journalists, output is a function of the position that the event ‘has’ (E), and of the rules that the journalist is obliged to follow (r). This function is not exact, because the practice of journalism is not exact. Many contingencies affect broadcast output: the fact that the Treasury Minister could not be found to explain the decision s/he had taken in front of camera; that the broadcast item was cut from three to two minutes requiring the statement from the Green party also to be cut; that the presentation given by the opposition party was aesthetically appealing, and so on. We can therefore think of the output which is actually produced as a single draw from lots of possible outputs. Because we are describing the production function of non-partisan journalists, we know that there is no ideal point which affects the journalist’s judgement, and so we can describe the production function as a draw from a normal distribution centred on E . The non-partisan journalist is thus much more likely than not to produce output that is very close to the “theoretically conceivable condition of unbiased”.

This does not tell us whether the output actually produced on a given occasion will be far away from E or not. The journalist may be inexperienced and produce very variable output; this may on a number of occasions result in output which is very far from the output which would be produced by a more experienced observer (see Fig. 2.1(a)), and which would be perceived by politicians as evidence of journalistic partisanship. Whether output is in fact far from E or not depends upon the rules that the journalist is obliged to follow, to which I return below.

The production function for the *partisan* journalist also depends on the event to be covered, and the rules that she is obliged to follow. Again, the production function can be thought of as a draw from numerous possible treatments of the event — a given distribution with a given mean. Here,

⁹ “He would be a bad journalist if he took no interest in the world around him and an unlikely human being if that interest did not father opinions; but in the office he has to stand back from the opinions, distance himself and keep them out of his work. . . we suppress our views and it is an effort” (Taylor, 1975)

Figure 2.1: Types of journalist



however, the distribution of possible treatments of the event is not centred on E , but somewhere between that position, and the ideal point of the journalist (I). Precisely where the centre point of this distribution would be is not specified: perhaps it is at the ideal point (particularly if E and I are close), or perhaps it is half-way between the two points (see Fig. 2.1(b)).

The key argument I wish to make is that some draws from these distributions will be judged 'out of bounds' by the rules the broadcaster sets. More particularly, I wish to claim that these rules disallow treatments of events which diverge from the treatment that would be given by an ideal observer, and thereby constrain output. This kind of situation is depicted visually in Fig. 2.1(c). The figure shows the two distributions from which the partisan and non-partisan journalist respectively draw their coverage. However, only part of that coverage — the shaded part — is 'ruled in' by the rules at work in the broadcaster. Since higher values of r reflect more constraining rules, the line $\frac{1}{r}$ becomes shorter the more constraining rules are.

The rules I am talking about are rules which typically enjoin certain values on journalists (fairness, impartiality, objectivity, neutrality, truthfulness, etc.); forbid certain practices (impersonation of others, stealing of documents, naming of minors); and set up some structure by which to arbitrate these values (complaints committees, ethics boards, ombudsmen, even courts).

How might these rules work to constrain output to within a reasonable distance of E ?

One classic example is the two-source rule, namely that any claim must be backed up two sources. Suppose that journalists gather interviews with government officials to ascertain the motive for war in Iraq. Suppose further that one irate source claims that the sole motive for war is George Bush's anger at Saddam Hussein's attempted assassination attempt of Bush's father. Were this claim to be included in a treatment of the decision to invade, it would result in output which was extremely critical of the US government, and probably be interpreted as far to the left. (This claim is very likely untrue; but what is more important is that if it had been true, more people within the US government would likely have said so). Thus, the two-source rule prevents

departure from E due to the willingness of some people to say anything to be featured in the news.

Another common rule is to require journalists to solicit comment from all parties to a dispute. Were only some parties heard in a discussion of some issue, it might prevent relevant facts from being aired. (Nowadays it is more common to hear this rule cited, not to justify the participation of a given individual, but rather to give a reason for their lack of participation: “the minister was asked to appear on the show but declined to do so”, which also serves a protective function).

We can therefore be more precise about the production functions described above. Suppose that there is some set of rules r , which varies in scope (covering more or fewer issues) and in rigidity (permitting more or fewer practices with respect to a particular issue, or being more specific about how an issue should be treated). The greater the value of r , the more possible treatments far away from E will be discarded. We can think of a partisan journalist’s production function as a draw from a normal distribution centred somewhere on the line \vec{EI} , but where draws which are further than $\frac{1}{r}$ units away from E are discarded.

2.3 THEORETICAL ASSUMPTIONS AND REALISM

So far I have described a model which is complicated by the standards of many models, but relatively simple compared to reality, which is infinitely more complicated and much messier.

The aim of the model is to generate *predictions* given certain inputs; for that reason it does not aim at an accurate *description* of the world. I do not wish to suggest that partisan journalists in each and every situation consider what their political ideal point is, and then work through ways in which they could slant coverage in the direction of that ideal point. Nor do I wish to suggest that there really ‘exists’ a distribution of possible treatments of a given news event; rather, these are convenient metaphors; as such they are neither true nor patently false.

Another way in which the model misdescribes journalists is in its use of ideal types. The partisan and non-partisan

journalist are ideal typical: configurations of certain features which may be found nowhere in the real world, but to which real-world examples approximate to greater or lesser degree.

Third, the repeated references to rules are present because, according to the theory, rules play an important role in keeping output close to what politicians might reasonably expect; they are not there because I consider journalism to be an exclusively, or even typically, rule-bound activity. Indeed, most journalistic work is carried out without explicit reference to rules. In part, the theory recognizes this: rules only intervene when a chance draw from the distribution of possible treatments of an event generates output that is far away from what might be reasonably expected.

The lack of explicit reference to rules may, however, be a partial consequence of the internalization of those rules over time, and their impact on how journalists themselves conceive of their rules. Although the two are distinct in theory, a combination of high journalistic partisanship and highly constraining rules may be incompatible in the long-run, as the repeated cognitive dissonance between the (unknowing) desire of the partisan journalist to slant coverage and the (explicit) demand rules make on constrained coverage is minimized either by jettisoning the desire to slant coverage or by exiting the organization (and thereby avoiding its rules).

Fourthly and finally, the model has so far ignored the implementation and acceptance of these rules. The reasons why journalists would accept such rules are discussed in section 35.

2.4 MANAGEMENT

By the management of the broadcaster, I mean those who sit on the board of the broadcaster, as well as either the chief executive officer of the broadcaster or the members of any executive board. The management of the broadcaster ordinarily has multiple goals which are common to many executives in organizations: these include esteem, operational autonomy, and personal or organizational income. Later in chapter 4, I discuss cases where the management of the broadcaster does not have these common ordinary

“goals”, but rather shares the ideal point of certain politicians who nominate board members.

The management of the broadcaster determines the stock of journalists, and affects broadcast output by promoting, demoting, recruiting, or dismissing journalists. Management can thus move output closer to a given point in policy space by promoting or recruiting partisan journalists who have ideal points close to that particular point, or by demoting or dismissing partisan journalists who hold ideal points far from that point. Management has approximate knowledge of which journalists are partisan, and the direction of their partisanship.

Selective personnel changes of this kind will be ineffective in moving output closer to a desired point in policy space if many journalists are non-partisan, *or* if rules are highly constraining. The resulting output will continue to be centred on *E*. Conversely, selective personnel changes will be effective where all or some journalists are partisan and rules provide only loose constraints.

Selective personnel changes of this kind do not normally conduce to management goals as listed above. Those passed over resent it; those rewarded attribute it to “politics”, not management. Management must therefore be induced to move output closer to a particular point in policy space, or must be replaced by suitably motivated individuals through politicians’ power of appointment.

2.5 THE POSSIBILITY OF INTERVENTION

Interventions consist of sanctions, rewards, and appointments. A sanction is any action which decreases management goal-satisfaction, including reductions in management esteem, operational autonomy, and personal or organizational income. Conversely, a reward is any action which increases management goal-satisfaction (esteem, operational autonomy, and personal or organizational income).

Interventions are of two types: actions which politicians may undertake because the law grants elected officials the right to perform that action, and all other actions. Call this second type of intervention an ‘informal intervention’.

A number of informal interventions are possible: politicians may write letters to the PSB criticising coverage; may request to meet members of management and discuss particular issues with them; may organize licence fee non-payment campaigns; may refuse to appear on PSB programmes, and so on. These methods of intervening may have certain psychological effects on the broadcaster: no one likes to be thought badly of, and executives or journalists might try to avoid such criticism in future by making sure that no similar event prompts politicians' ire.¹⁰

However, these informal interventions are likely to depend for their effectiveness on the politicians' ability to take further, legal, actions which may have far more potent effects on the broadcaster. For this reason, informal intervention is likely to be a poor strategy for inducing the broadcaster to produce output at close to the politician's ideal point; intervention through actions stipulated in law is instead likely to be a dominant strategy. I henceforth concentrate on "formal" interventions.

Interventions of this type are not always possible, or consequential: the law may limit the frequency or magnitude of such actions. Other things being equal, the more the law limits the frequency or magnitude of sanctions, rewards, or appointments, the more independent the broadcaster will be. This degree of legal protection is discussed further in section 2.10.

2.6 THE DESIRABILITY OF INTERVENTION

Where politicians believe that all journalists are non-partisan, or that rules are highly constraining, the management of the broadcaster can claim that the news produced by the broadcaster is dictated by the nature of the events themselves. Consequently, there is no benefit to be had by intervening, since any new personnel, or any new pressure, could not alter the kind of output produced; politicians therefore refraining from intervening.

Politician's beliefs about the partisanship of journalists are not formed through the same process as management beliefs about the partisanship of journalists, and thus the two

¹⁰ These informal interventions are also open to private citizens, but politicians' news-worthiness and importance within society makes them likely to be successful.

sets of beliefs are likely to diverge. In particular, politicians may falsely believe that journalists are more partisan than they actually are.

Politician's beliefs about the partisanship of journalists come from three sources. First, politicians keep track of the kind of output they expect given a particular event (expected output), and the actual output produced concerning that event. Politicians attribute the difference between expected output and actual output to journalistic partisanship. Second, politicians may have more direct knowledge of journalistic partisanship through their personal contacts with journalists. Third, politicians may infer that journalists are partisans on the basis of previous action by (other) politicians. That is, if politicians intervened in the broadcaster at some previous time, those politicians must have believed journalists to be partisans, and this is a good reason for believing journalists to be partisan.

If politicians believe that journalists are partisan, they will consider intervention in order to secure output closer to their ideal point. They may do so even if they believe that journalists are *co*-partisans: they may intervene in order to reward these individuals. Or, they may do so if they believe journalists within the broadcaster are partisan, but that their sympathies are divided equally between all parties. Let us say that if intervention is possible (and legal protection means that this is not always the case), and if politicians believe journalists to be partisan, intervention will be *attempted*.

2.7 THE DEFEASIBILITY OF INTERVENTION

Attempted interventions are *defeasible*. An intervention is based upon beliefs about expected output, journalistic partisanship, and the degree to which rules constrain. If management can demonstrate that these beliefs are in error, the claim can be defeated. Specifically, an intervention is defeasible if the management causes politicians to believe

1. journalists are less partisan than politicians think they are, or
2. rules constrain more than politicians think they do, or
3. that their expectations about output conditional on some event were implausible.

Direct evidence of journalistic partisanship is hard to convey, in particular if it is evidence that journalists are non-partisan. Recall that according to the definition given above, non-partisan journalists are typically journalists who abstain from taking positions. In response to management claims that no evidence has been found that a given journalist or group of journalists has taken a position in the past, politicians might well respond that “absence of evidence is not evidence of absence”.¹¹

Conversely, evidence that rules constrain is relatively easy to convey. In particular, explicit collections of rules can be distributed to politicians in order to demonstrate the rules followed by the broadcaster (see p. 210).

A demonstration that rules constrain defeases a politician’s intervention by convincing him or her there cannot be large differences between the output that would be produced by an ideal spectator and the actual output of the broadcaster, or that if there is a difference, this difference is not due to the partisanship of journalists, since this partisan impact would be dampened by constraining rules.

It is more common for these rules to arise in the context of a specific item to which politicians object. Here the argument is slightly different, and the emphasis on the constraining effect of rules is less. Typically the broadcaster argues that the purportedly objectionable coverage was in conformity with a rule followed by the broadcaster and, insofar as it is in conformity with this rule, it is not objectionable. (Implicit in this argument is the counterfactual: had the coverage not been in conformity with the rule, you would have been right to object to it; but had it not been in conformity with this rule we would not have broadcast it anyway). In any case, this argument is not sound, for it relies upon the unspoken major premise that “whatever is in conformity with the broadcaster’s rules is unobjectionable”.

Politicians’ responses to such a defense are deeply unsatisfactory. First, they may use non-rational means, and repeat their objection in a louder voice or with greater drama; but the more vociferously the politician repeats his or her objection, the more this objection resembles pure power-politics and the naked promise of future sanctions or rewards. As

11 A response in terms of direct evidence about journalistic partisanship might also be tactically foolish, as it may invite further queries from politicians concerning individual journalists or groups of journalists.

O'Neill notes, "There are strong social norms against an explicit threat, and violating them infuses the target with new attitudes and utilities beyond the motives inherent in the objective situation. . . . An individual under an ultimatum is likely to stiffen, since acquiescing means a loss of face" (O'Neill, 1991, pp. 95-96). Thus, using non-rational means may be counterproductive.

Second, politicians may challenge the minor premise of the argument, namely that the coverage was not in conformity with the cited rule. This, however, is a difficult claim for the politician to make, since it relies on the assertion that the politician knows how to apply the broadcaster's rules better than the broadcaster itself does. This claim can occasionally be made on those (relatively) rare occasions when the politician in question has worked in the broadcaster (see page 225), but is otherwise unlikely to be convincing. Additionally, even where the coverage does seem to violate a certain rule or at least not uphold it, the broadcaster may be able to cite additional rules which permit exceptions. Whilst I would not argue that the rules PSBs develop are as detailed as jurisprudence or public administrative procedure, it seems that the politician in this situation is placed "more and more into the position of a dilettante" facing "the unavoidably increasing weight of expertly trained officials" in Weber's (1991b, p. 89) classic phrase.

Third, the politician may challenge the major premise — that the rules the broadcaster has generally produce desirable effects. Cognitively speaking, this task is tremendously difficult, and requires the politician to think in synthesis about the broadcaster's approach to its entire work. Moreover this strategy may not be tenable where the politician has previously accepted the specific rule, or the rule-set of which it forms part. Politicians may then be accused of inconsistency: "you favoured this rule [or rule-set] six months ago when it favoured you, but now that it acts against you, you reject it, and are therefore hypocritical". Sometimes this strategy is linked with greater knowledge of what politicians actually committed to (see page 238); it is, however, likely to be unsuccessful when deployed against emerging parties who have not accepted the rule-set.

If an intervention cannot be defeated — that is, if there is no evidence that management can bring to bear which would convince politicians that the gap between the output they

expected and the actual output was not due to journalistic partisanship — then the intervention can be *defused*.

An intervention is defused where management admits that mistakes were made, but that such mistakes were made not because of journalistic partisanship, but because of inadequately constraining rules; and where management promises that the rules will be revised to ensure that mistakes of this nature will not occur again.

Defusing an intervention pre-empts sanctioning: by constraining journalists even further, the management signals to politicians that any subsequent intervention will likely be ineffective because any selective changes in personnel desired by the politicians will be rendered null and void by the dampening effect of rules.

In order to avoid interventions which could potentially reduce goal satisfaction, managers who value any of the goals discussed above – esteem, operational autonomy, and personal or organizational income – should encourage the development of rules constraining output. Yet in order to do this, management must be aware of the option to develop such rules, and must gain the consent of journalists.

The first requirement — that managers be aware of the option to develop such rules — sounds trivial, but is not. Literature on organizational decision-making has shown how solutions often emerge from a garbage can process, where the availability of suitable examples dominates. Management is more likely to be aware of the option of developing such rules where analogous rules have already been developed by other content providers or journalistic associations.

The second requirement — that management gain the consent of journalists — is also affected in the same way: journalists are more likely to consent to such rules where other similarly placed journalists in other media organisations have also consented to such rules, or where journalists as a whole have consented to such rules. Whether other journalists have agreed to such rules, it shows journalists in the public broadcaster that their peers have evaluated the consequences of rule-adoption and found them to be positive. That is, journalists must see the benefit of adopting rules. Part of the reason for journalists adopting such rules is that they understand the role that these rules play in defending

the broadcaster, and thus defending many factors which indirectly affect them, such as the broadcaster's funding stream. In other words, they understand that the rules may ultimately become a source of protection for them. Protection requires that the same body which creates, revises, or otherwise maintains the rules continue in office for a certain time. If management is subject to constant turnover, there is no guarantee that rules implemented one year will not be ripped up the year after.

The need to convince journalists also suggests that rules developed by politicians and imposed on the broadcaster cannot play the role that the theory requires of them. There are two reasons for excluding such rules. The first of these relies on the generalization that rules imposed by outsiders, particularly for complex tasks, are generally less well followed than rules developed independently (Locke, 2000, pp. 416-417). The second is that rules imposed by some group of politicians may not find favour with all politicians. They therefore fail to play the role taken on by independently developed rules, since there is little guarantee that journalists who follow such rules will not be left out in the cold if these rules are torn up by an incoming government.¹²

2.8 ON THE MARKET FOR NEWS AND RULE DEVELOPMENT

Above I hypothesized that rules analogous to the kind of rules employed in public service broadcasters were more likely to have been developed in a given country the larger¹³ the market for news in that country. More particularly, I argue that this proceeds through two different paths: first, the larger the market for news in a given country, the more likely journalists in that country are to embark on a professionalization project, producing rules which raise their status. Second, the larger the market for news in a given country, the more likely it is that news wholesalers — press agencies — will develop, and form a homogenized news product produced precisely through rules governing content.

¹² The Italian *par condicio* demonstrates both reasons: see page 156

¹³ By the size of the market for news, I do not mean the total profitability of the sector, but rather the total consumption. Although news can be consumed in a number of formats, historically the most important of these has been the printed daily newspaper. Accordingly, the exposition that follows is cast in terms of newspaper readership and production.

2.8.1 *Through journalists' professionalization project*

First, the larger the market for newspapers, the greater the division of labour. In the market for newspapers, the historical expansion of the market meant that the job of type-setting the newspaper became separate from the job of writing, editing, and publishing it. Later, the job of writing and editing — that is, the journalistic part of the process — was separated from the job of publishing the newspaper. Consequently, as the market grew, the more it became appropriate to talk of 'journalists' instead of owner-editors or publishers.

Second, the larger the market - that is, the larger the number of newspapers sold, either relative to population in absolute terms - the larger the number of entrants, assuming that fixed costs are present and are otherwise equal, and that firms enter the market until marginal revenue equals marginal cost. The larger the number of entrants, the larger the absolute number of journalists required to produce content for these entrants.

Third, the larger the market, and the larger the accounting profit of the players in the market, the more wages for journalists will be able to support full-time journalists. High circulation of Scandinavian newspapers enabled market players to accumulate economic resources and "therefore to offer the journalists decent salaries that made it unnecessary for them to seek other sources of income" As (Høyer *et al.*, 1975 quoted in Hallin and Mancini, 2004, p. 170). Retallack (1993, p. 184) notes that journalism in Germany at the beginning of the nineteenth century was almost always "a secondary occupation or *Nebenberuf*, that almost never yielded sufficient income on its own"; but that this changed rapidly such that by 1848 those pursuing journalism as a primary occupation outnumbered those pursuing it as a secondary occupation by three-to-one.

Fourth, the larger the absolute and relative numbers of journalists, and the more journalists perceive themselves as journalists instead of editors or publishers, the greater their awareness of potential shared interests and the need for some structure to pursue them. In the era when a single journalist wrote the entire content of a newspaper and engaged with a publisher to do so, any question of broader interests could easily have been subsumed under

the rubric of the entirely individual personal relationship between the journalist in question and his publisher.

Because journalists' shared interests were only partly concerned with financial remuneration, and were also concerned with non-financial incentives such as status, journalists have not always organized by forming trades unions; or, if they did, these trade unions were atypical, in that a primary concern was not the development of a mechanism for collective wage-bargaining and for dictating the terms of labour, but rather developing standards to govern what they produced. That is, they began a project of professionalization.

By professionalization, I mean the process by which those who practice a particular occupation, in order to secure both economic and social interests — in particular an increase in social standing —, form themselves into a group, standardize and systematize the knowledge they use in their occupation, and restrict or limit entry to the group, often through requiring entrants to adopt this same, standardized, systematized knowledge (Larson, quoted in [MacDonald, 1995](#), p. 11). This process is most clear - and has been most successful - in the fields of law and medicine, occupations which are very clearly based on "advanced, or complex, or esoteric, or arcane knowledge" ([MacDonald, 1995](#), p. 1).

To apply this concept to journalism may seem less appropriate given that (1) knowledge of how to report current events is less obviously complex or esoteric than, say, law;¹⁴ or that (2) the entry requirements to journalism are typically less demanding than the entry requirements for either medicine or law. It may seem particularly inappropriate in countries like Britain, where a plurality of journalists prefer to describe their occupation as a "craft", rather than as a "profession" ([Delano, 2002](#)).

Nevertheless, journalists have embarked upon this process of professionalization across Europe, succeeding to different degrees. Indeed, the concept of professionalization - and degrees of success in professionalizing the occupation of journalism, form one of the key *differentia* in the leading typology of media systems ([Hallin and Mancini, 2004](#)).

The references to standardized knowledge should make clear the link between professionalization and rules. These

¹⁴ Although journalism courses now include large elements of the law on copyright, libel, and protection of sources.

rules are adopted by journalists not because they serve to restrict entry, but rather because they help in boosting journalists' status. As Weber noted, voluntary submission to rules can boost status:

Strict discipline and control, which at the same time has consideration for the official's sense of honour, and the development of prestige sentiments of the status group, as well as the possibility of public criticism, work in the direction of strict mechanization.... A strong status sentiment among officials not only agrees with the official's readiness to subordinate himself. . . status sentiments are the consequence of such subordination, for internally they balance the official's self-feeling (Weber, 1991a, p. 208)

This link has been explicitly noted in studies of journalism. The insistence on a body of advanced, or complex, or esoteric knowledge becomes "a prominent component of news journalists' occupational ideology", linked in part to the concept of professionalism (Aldridge and Evetts, 2003, p. 558). Professionalism serves journalists' needs for prestige - which are greater than before thanks to the influx of graduate and post-graduate trainees. "It is a discourse of self-control, even self-belief, an occupational badge or marker which. . . enables workers to justify and emphasize the importance of their work to themselves and others" (Aldridge and Evetts, 2003, p. 556, p. 555).

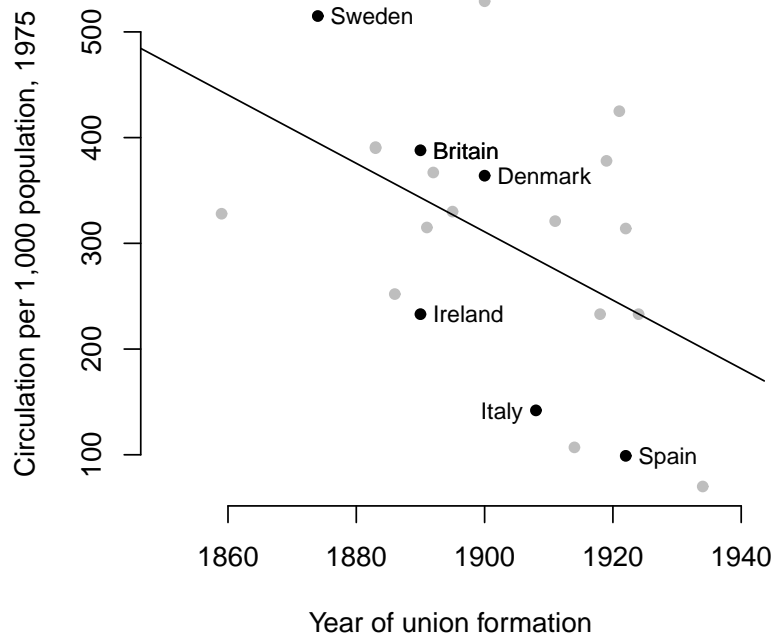
Thus, journalists in countries with large markets for news, who had formed associations like the Swedish *Publicistklubben* or the Austrian *Presseclub Concordia*, developed rules which had as their primary function an increase in the social standing of journalists. They were, in every sense, 'honour courts', where journalists could demonstrate the binding commitments they had contracted amongst themselves, and thereby demonstrate their merit.

The link between the size of the market and the formation of professional associations can be seen in Figure 2.2, which shows the relationship between press circulation, in daily newspaper copies per 1,000 population in 1975,¹⁵ and the date of formation of a journalists' association or union.¹⁶

¹⁵ Page 64 explains why 1975 data is used.

¹⁶ Sources: for Austria, Norway, the Netherlands, Finland, Hallin and Mancini (2004, pp. 171-2); for Britain, Hallin and

Figure 2.2: Newspaper circulation and journalists' associationalism



There is a moderately strong negative correlation (Pearson's $r = -0.5$) between circulation and year of union formation, suggesting that bigger markets do indeed lead to greater professionalization.

2.8.2 Through press agencies

With the expansion of the market of news and consequent division of labour, opportunities arose for intermediaries who could act as 'wholesalers' of news. These intermediaries — press agencies — invested to create networks of

Mancini (2004, p. 223); for France, <http://www.snj.fr/>; for Belgium, <http://www.agjpb.be/ajp/ajp/histoire.php>; for Portugal, <http://www.jornalistas.online.pt/canal.asp?idselect=0&idCanal=51&p=0>; for Spain, http://www.fape.es/index.php?option=com_content&task=view&id=262&Itemid=136; for Switzerland, <http://www.icom-info.ch/p.php?ID=897>; for Germany, Retalack (1993); for Italy, www.fnsi.it; for Greece, <http://www.esiea.gr/>; for Estonia, Latvia, Høyer *et al.* (1993); for Japan, Huffman (1997, p. 275); for Australia, <http://www.atua.org.au/ptta/038.html>; for Denmark, personal communication from Hans-Henrik Holm.

correspondents who could cover a breadth of events which could not be matched by any single newspaper. They made money on their investment by selling the same copy, produced by their correspondents, to multiple news outlets. In order to be attractive to a variety of outlets, the news produced by press agency correspondents had to meet certain demands, including not being ‘slanted’ lest it conflict with either with the particular editorial or implicit slant of a given newspaper, or the expressed desire of a given newspaper not to provide such slanted information. It was also, however, desirable that this news be relatively homogeneous in its structure: in other words, that it be regular. Press agencies therefore had certain rules of composition which were followed by their correspondents, which made agency copy regular, structurally homogenous, and thus relatively easy to sell to competing newspapers.

Thus, where press agencies exist, it becomes possible for a public service broadcaster to draw on, or cite the example of, rules for content established by press agencies. We see this development both in Sweden and in the United Kingdom, the two largest media markets considered in this thesis. Where, however, press agencies do not exist — or where, as in Spain and Italy, these agencies existed but operated not according to market incentives but to support from non-democratic regimes — such development is not possible.

In between these two extremes there are cases of countries which, although they may have media markets which are relatively large per capita, either lacked a domestic news agency (Ireland) or had a news agency which was more of a consortia of different newspapers and less an independent entity (Denmark).

2.9 ON PARTISANSHIP

So far, I have described politicians’ beliefs about the partisanship of journalists as primarily a function of the gap they perceive between the way the PSB covers events and the way politicians expect them to be covered.

Yet scholars know that the *actual* partisanship of journalists varies in predictable ways across media systems; or rather, that media systems which approximate to certain

ideal types (namely, Hallin & Mancini's Polarized Pluralist, Liberal, and Democratic Corporatist models) demonstrate higher levels of partisanship than in other media systems which conform to other, different types.

Might it not therefore be reasonable to suppose that politicians are as well-placed as academics to judge how partisan journalists generally are, and use this to infer how particular PSB journalists are in particular? and would this process not be easier for politicians (and also theoretically more parsimonious) than inferring partisanship based on assumptions about content?

If this were the case, it would mean that partisanship of the media system — or rather, the degree of political parallelism, as Hallin and Mancini put it — would become a third independent variable explaining the independence of the public service broadcaster in addition to the degree of legal protection and the size of the media market.

If this were the case, then first, our expectations about the rank ordering of the broadcasters in the small-n sample would change: we would expect PSBs in Democratic Corporatist media systems (that is, Danmarks Radio and Sveriges Radio) to be less independent than the BBC and RTÉ, given similar levels of legal protection. Second, the theory would amount to an elaboration of the typology produced by Mancini and Hallin; there is nothing wrong with this, but it might lead to the assumption that it is membership of the type itself — the mere fact of belonging to a Democratic Corporatist system or a Polarized Pluralist system — which explains higher or lower independence; and not the conjunction of political parallelism and the size of the market.

I argue that the degree of political parallelism in the wider media system is *not* an important and additional independent variable, since although it seems probable that the journalists in the PSB are influenced by the broader stock of journalists in society and the views they hold, it seems improbable to suppose that the journalists in the PSB are somehow a mirror image of the journalists in society, or that they form a representative sample thereof.

Instead, as I have noted, management enjoys discretion in forming the stock of journalists within the PSB, and can choose to hire or fire those journalists which best conform

to their vision of the PSB. Since hiring large numbers of partisan journalists leaves management open to future sanctions, and since selective personnel changes do not in any event conduce to management's normal goals, it seems unlikely that management would select for partisanship, and instead more than probable that management would select *against* journalistic partisans. Provided therefore that there are some non-partisan journalists, the PSB can pursue independence by developing rules (assuming these can be introduced successfully) and by asking for and getting greater legal protection. Within limits, the degree of political parallelism of the media system more broadly is not something which explains the independence of the public broadcaster.

The qualification is important, because sometimes there simply are no non-partisan journalists to be recruited. In countries which fully experienced the wave of student unrest in 1968, it was very difficult to find young recruits who were not in some way committed to some cause. The conjuncture of this turn to the left with massive (and necessary) hiring in Sveriges Radio and Sveriges Television ultimately led to the perception, on the part of politicians, that SR was staffed by left partisans. The UK, which never really had a "68", was much less affected by this problem.¹⁷ Perhaps if the degree of mobilization seen in 1968 had been systemic, SR, SVT, and DR would have developed coping mechanisms. As it is, 1968 can best be described in ungainly language of modern social science as an exogenous factor.

2.10 MORE ON SANCTIONING

Above I argued that politicians' interventions ultimately rely for their efficacy on the legal possibilities open to politicians in virtue of their office. Here I expand on the two types of legal possibility: sanctioning and rewarding the broadcaster.

We can construct three broad categories of legal possibility for sanctioning:

- psychological sanctions which result from repeated parliamentary oversight;

¹⁷ On the limited student protests in the UK in 1968, see [Thomas \(2002\)](#).

- *ex ante* restrictions on the operation of the broadcaster which reduce organizational autonomy and can be used as bargaining chips; and
- *ex post* sanctions such as reductions in funding levels or the threat of re-appointment.

PSYCHOLOGICAL SANCTIONS Parliamentary and governmental oversight plays a dual role in the literature on principal-agent problems in politics. Typically, it is cited as an example of how politicians can compel their agents - bureaucrats, executive agencies, etc., - to release information, thus reducing the asymmetry in information between the two. This reduces the agent's ability to shirk, since politicians can now deploy sanctions more judiciously in the light of better information.

Oversight also however plays a role in sanctioning. Aggressive or repeated questioning which implies criticism negatively affects personal and organizational esteem and reputation. Where agents value these goods, they may try to prevent such questioning in the future by a number of strategies: by avoiding the particular type of content which prompted the questioning; by pursuing bland and inoffensive content which could not prompt any such questioning at all; or by pursuing content in other fields which is favourable to the questioner, thereby currying his or her favour. The psychology of accountability suggests that such conformist strategies "become the likely coping strategy... when audience views are known prior" to decision-making (Lerner and Tetlock, 1999, p. 256): political committees, with committee members' views tagged neatly by their respective party labels, are thus likely to promote conformity instead of a more self-critical attitude.

Where parliamentary or government oversight is more frequent, there is greater opportunity to pursue such aggressive questioning, and thus to inflict sanctions. We should therefore expect PSB independence to be lower the more frequent oversight is, other things being equal. Additionally, where parliamentary or government oversight is in person, rather than written, the psychological effect of questioning is greater.

Not all parliamentary or governmental questioning should be interpreted as sanctioning, nor is all sanctioning questioning. Parliamentarians or members of the government

retain the right to ask questions of the broadcaster without such questioning necessarily being seen as an "attack on the independence should have by rights" (Tjernström, 2000, p. 127; cf. Rydbeck, 1990, p. 150). The precise point at which questioning becomes an attempt to harangue broadcasting executives is unclear, but chapter 5 gives numerous examples of extremely detailed questioning from Spanish and Italian parliamentarians.

Equally, parliamentarians and members of the government may attempt to sanction the broadcaster by writing strongly-worded letters or making heated phone-calls. Why then are these non-legal possibilities not included in my analysis? First, such sanctions are unlikely to have the same impact outside of official fora. The greater the legitimacy of accountability exercises, the more likely they are to be successful (Lerner and Tetlock, 1999, pp. 258-259); parliamentary committees, compared to private members' initiatives, enjoy comparative advantage in terms of legitimacy.

EX ANTE RESTRICTIONS A second form of sanctioning mechanism comes through the stipulation of *ex ante* controls on the broadcaster: administrative procedures which limit in advance agents' room for manoeuvre. There are both discretionary and non-discretionary *ex ante* controls. Common non-discretionary controls on PSBs' freedom of operation include content quotas, recognition of unions and worker representation, and requirements for citizen input. Common discretionary controls include the requirement for ministerial permission before borrowing more than a certain amount, or before subcontracting particular services to separate companies.

Both types of *ex ante* controls are found in the rational choice institutionalist literature, but they play different roles. Non-discretionary *ex ante* controls, if they are at all relevant to the principal's control of the agent, are attempts to privilege a particular political position by 'stacking the deck' (Moe, 1990, p. 226, fn. 14); they contribute to the 'locking-in' of the preferences of a particular principal or set of principals. There is no sanctioning element. Discretionary *ex ante* controls, however, function as sanctioning mechanisms in the normal way. Ministers may withhold ministerial permission as a way of punishing the broadcaster for having broadcast material harmful to the government. Or, approval may be given pursuant to the removal of personnel, or a change in

programme policy, thereby turning these *ex ante* controls into a bargaining tool. Consequently, the greater the *ex ante* controls, the lower the independence of the PSB.

EX POST SANCTIONS The third form of sanctioning comes from threats to personal or organizational income by refusing reappointment or by cutting funding. When the threat of non-re-appointment is not available (because re-appointment is disallowed by law), agency shirking can be greater. Or, where the threat of non-reappointment is not immediate (because terms in office are long), or not threatening (because office-holders are typically in their last career, or the politicians have nothing to offer them), agency-shirking can be greater. Similarly, where budgets are assured for a number of years and contain no discretionary element, the potential for agency-shirking is greater.

APPOINTMENTS Politicians may not need to deploy sanctions where they have substantial discretion in appointment. Given substantial discretion, principals may be able to appoint broadcasting executives who share their ideal point. Again, where these individuals have considerable power over the output of the PSB, the result may be diminished PSB independence.

THE PRINCIPALS So far, I have discussed 'politicians' as if their identity and interests were clear. In the language of principal-agent theory, PSBs have multiple (often collective) principals, who change over time. In the simplest possible case, a single government minister in office for perpetuity may use the entirety of sanctioning mechanisms described above. In the most complex case, different constellations of actors - parliamentary committees, parliaments, ministers, cabinets - use differing sanctions according to differing decision-making rules, involving normal majorities, pluralities, or super-majorities, each of which would be frequently rescinded by changes in the composition of parliament or of government.

In general, we can say that the

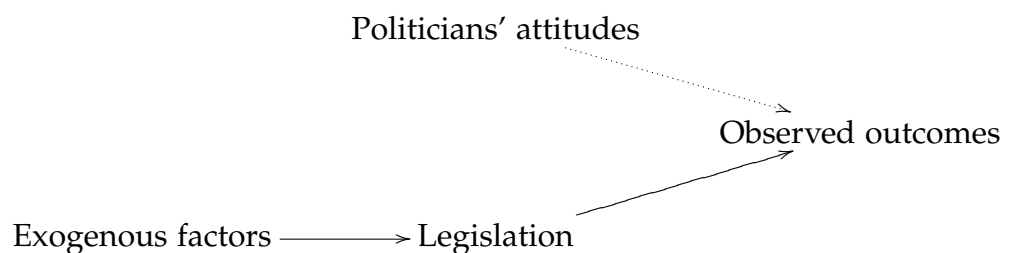
- greater the number of veto players — actors whose consent is required for sanctioning or rewarding —, the less politicians in general can sanction.

- the longer the legally mandated period in between decisions which may be used to sanction or reward, the less politicians in general can sanction.

Note that these principal-agent problems are replicated within the broadcaster. Appointing or sanctioning a particular individual will only lead to decreased independence if that individual has some influence within the broadcaster; yet appointments to the broadcaster typically only concern the supervisory board or, *in extremis*, the chief executive officer. Consequently, even if politicians manage to appoint to the board of the broadcaster individuals who share their ideal point, they cannot be sure that this ideal point will subsequently be implemented.

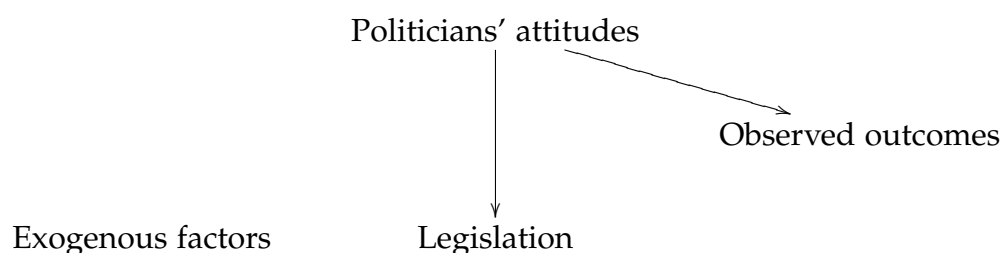
CRITICISMS We have so far considered the legal protection afforded the broadcaster as entirely exogenous. Treating legal measures as exogenous is partly permissible because legislation is sticky. Moe (1990, p. 240) has noted that formal restrictions of the kind considered here work in separation-of-powers systems because “accomplishing anything through new laws - changing the legal status quo - [is] very difficult”; consequently, “whatever is formalized will tend to endure”. Thus, legislation is exogenous in the short run (see Figure 2.3).

Figure 2.3: Legislation constrains



In parliamentary systems with strong party discipline, by contrast, legislation can be passed quickly and at low cost. The legislation therefore governing the PSB may therefore be endogenous. Parties who wish to intervene in the PSB but who are prevented from doing so by legislation may change the law in order to do so. We may therefore observe a spurious correlation between legal protection and political independence if both are motivated by politicians’ initial attitudes towards the PSB (see Figure 2.4).

Figure 2.4: Legislation is epiphenomenal



Is this concern justified? There are three principal instances of legislative change which made it easier to sanction the broadcaster: the abolition of licence fee funding in Australia and New Zealand, and the 1993 reform of Rai in Italy.¹⁸ In the Australian and New Zealand cases the licence fee was abolished because its real value had declined to the point whether collecting the fee was not cost-effective: "[t]here was no evidence that the [Australian] Labour government introduced the new system in order to hobble the Commission" (Inglis and Brazier, 1983, p. 187). The 1993 reform of Rai is more ambiguous: the law grants the broadcast less legal protection primarily because two year boards terms are short; yet the term length was set at two years because the law was expected to be temporary. A majority instances of legislative change are instances of decreases in politicians' discretionary ability to reward, sanction or appoint. Legislative reforms in Spain, Ireland, Sweden (1993) and Italy (1975 and 2004) have all restricted politicians' ability to sanction.

2.11 SUMMARY AND LIST OF HYPOTHESES

The rational vote-seeking politician often found in much political science is voracious in his hunt for votes, ready to discard previously cherished beliefs and ideology. Since we often believe — much evidence to the contrary — that the media is crucial to this hunt for votes, we often think that politicians will be as voracious towards the media as they are in their hunt for votes. Yet this does not necessarily

¹⁸ The 2008 reform of France Télévisions is more difficult to judge: commercial revenue was abolished in exchange for index-linked licence fee settlements, but at the same time the group chief executive will now be appointed by the government.

follow. In this chapter I started with traditional assumptions about rational vote-seeking politicians, and have given reasons why rational politicians might not continually intervene in the public service broadcaster. That is, rational politicians intervene in the broadcaster when they believe they can get a better deal out of it; they can get a better deal out of it if they think that journalists are partisan creatures and thus can be changed around according to preference. Conversely, politicians will not believe that they can get a better deal out of the broadcaster where they believe the stock of journalists is resolutely non-partisan, or where those journalists themselves are constrained.

Additionally, even if politicians conclude that they can get a better deal out of the broadcaster by intervening, they may not always be able to intervene, or may not be able to wield the full gamut of sanctions and rewards that they otherwise might. They are constrained by the law which governs the public service broadcaster; and such laws are relatively sticky.

We can now deliver on the promise of the first paragraph of this chapter — that is, hypothesis about states of the world given some initial conditions.

- H₁ The greater the degree of legal protection, the more independent the PSB
- H₂ The more a PSB has rules constraining output, the more independent the PSB
- H₃ PSBs will be more likely to develop rules constraining output where similar rules have been developed by
 - a) journalists' associations or by
 - b) domestic press agencies
- H₄ The larger the market for news, the more likely rules constraining output will be developed by journalists' association or domestic press agencies

These four hypotheses can be set against the two rival hypotheses discussed in chapter 1:

- H₅ The more partisan the bureaucracy in a given country, the less independent the PSB
- H₆ The more polarized the party system in a given country, the less independent the PSB

The statistical chapter that follows tests hypotheses H1, H5 and H6 directly, and tests the linked hypotheses H2 – H4 jointly (the regression model tests the direct impact of the size of the market for news on independence, it does not test the impact through rule development, since this cannot be satisfactorily operationalized quantitatively). To foreshadow what comes next, the rival hypotheses are found not to be significantly associated to independence, and thus can be dismissed. Thus, after the statistical chapter I turn to demonstrating the steps assumed in H2 — H4 more carefully.

Part II

STATISTICS

3

A STATISTICAL MODEL OF PSB INDEPENDENCE

This chapter uses statistical analysis to evaluate multiple explanations of PSB independence, using an imperfect proxy for professionalization as an independent variable alongside other, more direct operationalizations of concepts used in rival hypotheses. It therefore plays a dual role. First, it eliminates rival hypotheses, namely that the independence of the broadcaster depends on the partisanship of the bureaucracy or the degree of political polarization in a society. The early elimination of rival hypotheses justifies the subsequent narrowing of the focus of the thesis. Were we to consider many more explanatory hypotheses in the historical analyses that follow, the quality of the analysis would suffer. Second, it helps us both to locate our cases and our variables. That is, by performing this statistical analysis now, we can understand what our model predicts about Spain, Italy, the United Kingdom, Ireland, Sweden and Denmark, and we can also gain a better understanding of the relative importance of our two principal explanatory variables, legal protection and professionalization.

The chapters which follow this will subsequently test whether the statistical links found here work in the expected fashion when we look at individual cases in more detail. They also serve a dual purpose: they both compensate for the indirectness of the proxies used here, and identify the causal links more clearly.

The chapter starts by discussing the operationalization of the dependent and independent variables (3.1); indeed, this constitute the bulk of the chapter. Much time is spent discussing the indicator for independence (see table 3.1 for values). Following this, there is a brief discussion concerning technical issues (3.2) before the results are displayed and discussed (3.3).

3.1 OPERATIONALIZATION

3.1.1 *Operationalizing the dependent variable*

Given the definition of political independence above (p. 12), any 'measure' of independence would require a running reconstruction of the decisions of hundreds of journalists throughout the PSB. Although journalists' own descriptions of their work and answers to survey questions could carry us some way along this path, they are unlikely to furnish us with measurements of independence which can be applied with confidence to compare and/or rank PSBs in several countries. I therefore use a proxy variable based on the turnover of the chief executive of the broadcaster.

The practice of measuring the political independence of an institution by the turnover of its chief executives comes from the literature on central bank independence. [Cukierman \(1992\)](#) and [Cukierman and Webb \(1995\)](#) developed two proxies for independence: the rate of turnover of central bank governors (TOR), and the political vulnerability index (VUL). TOR is equal to the reciprocal of the average tenure of the central bank governor in years. VUL is the percentage of government changes which were followed within six months by a change in the central bank governor. In adapting these indexes for the case of public broadcasting, I have calculated the turnover of the chief executive of the broadcaster. In countries with a dual board structure (supervisory board and executive board), this is the director-general or *Intendant*. In countries with a single board structure (France, Bulgaria, Canada, Portugal, South Africa), it is the President of the broadcaster. I average TOR and VUL, and subtract the result from 1 to get a proxy measurement for independence (*I*):

$$I = \left(1 - \frac{TOR + VUL}{2}\right)$$

Data on government changes is taken from [Budge et al. \(1998\)](#), [Müller-Rommel et al. \(2003\)](#), and subsequent issues of the *European Journal of Political Research*. Data on the turnover of chief executives has been taken from broadcasters' websites and a Lexis-Nexis news search.

The logic behind the use of TOR is as follows. Where chief executives are in office for a very short period of time, they

lack knowledge of the broadcaster, and consequently lack capacity to defend it. By contrast, where the chief executive has been in office longer than one legislative term - and perhaps longer than many of the members of that legislature - then she will know more about the broadcaster, and better able to defend it. Certainly, where the broadcaster is run by a string of short-term executives, it is likely to be in a dependent position vis-a-vis politicians. This is certainly the case with Hungarian broadcaster MTV, none of whose directors-general have served a full term, and where six of fourteen directors have served less than a year in office.

The logic behind the use of VUL is as follows. If, following a new government, there is a change in the chief executive, then either the chief executive reached the end of her term, or left early. If she reached the end of her term, it may be that the terms of chief executives are designed so as to coincide with changes in government (the case with the Spanish system until 2006 and the current Estonian system).¹⁹ If this is the case, then one may reasonably assume that the chief executive is, in some sense, the expression of a government choice. If the terms do not coincide by design, then the fact that they did so coincide may create this impression in any case. If, on the other hand, the chief executive left early, she was either constrained to resign, or did so of her own accord. If she was constrained to resign, then this most likely represents the introduction of some new constraint connected to the government. If she did so of her own accord, this may reflect a belief that the government should have a 'clean slate' to influence the forthcoming selection of a chief executive.

The logic behind aggregating these two measures in a single proxy is two-fold: first, the two measures may capture different aspects of political dependence; aggregating them may therefore allow us to pick up on certain aspects of independence which would not be noticed were just one indicator used.²⁰ Second, insofar as each indicator involves error, aggregating two measures can reduce the error present.²¹

¹⁹ Article 10 of Law no. 4 of the 10th January 1980 ("De estatuto de la radio y la television"); §31, comma 2 of the Broadcasting Act of the 19th May 1994.

²⁰ The Pearson's r for the two measures is 0.675, suggesting that the two indicators are highly correlated.

²¹ Indeed, as Costner (1969) has shown, no causal relationship between two abstract concepts can be demonstrated without more than one indirect measure.

Table 3.1: Values of independence for thirty-six broadcasters

PSB	Acronym	Independence
SRG SSR idée suisse (Switzerland)	SRG-SSR	0.96
Norrikskringskasting (Norway)	NRK	0.93
Oy Yleisradio (Finland)	YLE	0.92
Zweites Deutsches Fernsehen (Germany)	ZDF	0.91
Australian Broadcasting Corporation	ABC	0.91
British Broadcasting Corporation	BBC	0.89
Danmarks Radio (Denmark)	DR	0.89
Televisión Nacional (Chile)	TN	0.89
Radio Telefís Éireann (Ireland)	RTÉ	0.88
Nippon Housou Kyokai (Japan)	NHK	0.87
Vlaamse Radio- en Televisieomroep (Flanders)	VRT	0.87
Sveriges Television Ab (Sweden)	SVT	0.86
Canadian Broadcasting Corporation	CBC	0.86
Osterreichischer Rundfunk (Austria)	ORF	0.85
Eesti Televisioon (Estonia)	EETV	0.82
Radiotelevisione Italiana (1975-93) (Italy)	RAI	0.81
Radio-Télévision Belge de la Communauté française (Wallonia)	RTBF	0.79
Israel Broadcasting Authority	IBA	0.79
Television New Zealand	TVNZ	0.78
Corporation for Public Broadcasting (USA)	CPB	0.75
Telewizja Polska (Poland)	TVP	0.75
Latvijas Valsts Televizija (Latvia)	LT	0.75
France Télévision (1982-2000)	FT82	0.72
France Télévision (1973-82)	FT73	0.72
Radiotelevizija Slovenija (Slovenia)	RTVSLO	0.68
Societatea Română de Televiziune (Romania)	RO/TVR	0.65
Ceská Televize (Czech Republic)	CTV	0.64
South Africa Broadcasting Corporation	SABC	0.59
Radiotelevisão Portuguesa SA (Portugal)	RTP	0.57
Television Española SA (Spain)	TVE	0.56
Bălgarsko Nationalno Radio (Bulgaria)	BNR	0.56
Lietuvos Radijas ir Televizija (Lithuania)	LRT	0.53
Radiotelevisione Italiana (1993-2004) (Italy)	RAI	0.42
Slovenská Televizija (Slovenia)	SK/STV	0.39
Magyar Televízió (Hungary)	MTV	0.36
Bălgarska Nationalna Televizija (Bulgaria)	BNT	0.27

ADVANTAGES AND DISADVANTAGES OF THIS MEASURE There
 are three principal advantages of this measure. First, the necessary data is readily available for a large number of cases. Table 3.1 shows independence scores for 36 broadcasters, with a total of 266 chief executives included. The temporal span of the data in many cases extends from either the broadcasters' foundation or first appointment under a democratic regime.

Second, the measure permits statistical analyses of independence, not only because the measure is numerical and continuous, but also, following on from the previous point, because the large number of cases for which data is available mean that linear regression analysis can be carried out.

Third, the measure correlates well with our pre-theoretical judgements of the independence of various PSBs, and with more direct measures of independence according to pub-

lic opinion. Polls conducted in Denmark, Britain, Canada, France and Italy show that broadcasters with higher scores were more likely to be perceived as independent by the public. 42% and 38% of respondents believed that the BBC and Danmarks Radio respectively were independent of the government (MORI, 2004, Danmarks Radio, 2006); a slightly lower percentage (35%) believed CBC was independent of the Canadian government (COMPAS, 1999). 22% of respondents thought that the French media in general was independent of political interests; in a subsequent question, France Télévision was neither substantially more trusted, nor substantially less trusted, suggesting that if a question had been asked about independence, France Télévision would not score substantially better (CSA and Marianne, 2003). Finally, older internal polling for Rai showed that only 4.1% of respondents believed Rai to be “outside of politics”, which I take to be equivalent to “politically independent” (Istituto Eurisko and Montesi, 1988). These responses match the broadcasters’ ranking and relative distance according to Table 3.1.

There are, however, a number of pitfalls with this measure. The first is that the measure always implies some dependence, since no broadcaster will score one. Chief executives may retire from work, die in office, or be poached by other television competitors - all reasons which are unrelated to the broadcaster’s independence, but cause some increase in values of TOR or VUL. However, this will not affect the relative position of the broadcasters if, for example, the incidence of unrelated causes such as death, retirement, or poaching is the same across all broadcasters.

A second related problem is that the measure loses discriminatory power above a certain point. BBC directors-general who have retired have done so after seven or ten years; SRG-SSR directors who have retired have done so after twenty years; but this difference, whilst it affects the value of TOR, is unlikely to reflect genuine differences in independence instead of greater competition for the first of these jobs.

Third, the choice to count only changes of chief executive officer which happen within six months of a change in government is partly arbitrary. There are no good reasons why a change of chief executive 179 days after a change in government should be an indicator of dependence, whilst a change of chief executive 181 days after a change in government should not. In particular, where term lengths are very

short, the government may wait until the next round of appointments before it intervenes. Following the election of the Berlusconi government in May 2001, it took nine months before the mandate of the left-appointed board expired. Yet the extraordinary levels of turnover at the top management (Hanretty, 2006, ch. 4) suggest that such turnover was 'political', even if it fell outwith Cukierman and Webb's six month window.

Additionally, the measure does not take into account anticipated reactions. Only one President of the US Corporation for Public Broadcasting (Martin Rubenstein) has resigned within six months of a change of President or change in control of Congress, but three (John Macy, Donald Ledwig and Robert T. Coonrod) have resigned in the July preceding closely fought presidential elections (of which two resulted in a change of President). It is difficult to say whether these resignations were anticipated reactions; but interregna at the head of a public broadcaster facing an incoming Congress or executive opposed to it may be just as politically debilitating as interregna which come after the Congress or executive is re-elected.

Fourth, the measures concentrate on the chief executive in each PSB, prescinding from the fact that not all directors-general have the same power within their organization. If, for example, the director-general in a dual-board PSB enjoys little decision-making power, and if real power is instead concentrated in the supervisory board, then a better measure of independence might be the replacement rate of the supervisory board following changes in government. This objection is not particularly troubling: in PSBs with powerful boards, changes of boards might *also* occur following changes of government, but this does not preclude a change in director-general.

These indicators face problems of observational equivalence in theory but not in practice. By the problem of observational equivalence, I mean the problem of interpreting infrequent sanctioning of agents by principals. Infrequent sanctioning may mean that the agent complies with the principals' wishes, preferences, or commands; or, it may mean that the agent has completely eluded the control of the principal, and has run amok (Pollack, 2002, 202). More specifically, a broadcasting chief executive may last a long time in office because she is genuinely independent, or be-

cause she has accommodated a range of governments and governmental instructions.

This issue has been addressed in the literature on central bank independence. Cukierman (1992, 385) gives as examples of long-lived (and so potentially subservient) central bank governors the governors of Iceland, Denmark and Britain, who had average tenure of 33, 20, and 10 years. If tenures above twelve years in duration - or three times the modal parliamentary term - are suspect, then there are few suspect chief executives: of the 266 for whom we have data, twelve were in office for more than twelve years²²; only two broadcasters had more than one such long-lived executive (NRK and ZDF), both of which score low on TOR and VUL for other periods.

3.1.2 *Operationalizing the independent variables*

To operationalize polarization, I use the unweighted range of party left-right scores for each country for parties reported in Huber and Inglehart (1995). Huber and Inglehart's measures are used in preference to other data, since they track party position, rather than policy stands: to the extent that polarization is thought to affect independence negatively, it is through the broadcasting of extreme politicians' statements, rather than politicians' extreme policy proposals.

To operationalize the partisanship of the bureaucracy, I use data from the International Institute of Management Development, which includes in its survey of business executives a question on whether 'public service... is [or is not] independent from political interference' International Institute for Management Development (2006). Scores range from one to six; higher scores indicate greater independence. Val-

²² They were: Dieter Stolte, Karl Holzamer (ZDF), Einar Sundstrom (YLE), Sam Nilsson (SVT), Marcel Bezencon (SRG-SSR), Ettore Bernabei (Rai), Kaare Fostervoll, Einar Forde (NRK), A Davidson Dunton (CBC), Talbot Duckmanton, and the appropriately long-lived Charles Moses (ABC). The majority of these twelve were appointed before the growth of the television industry in the late seventies and eighties. There is little to suggest from the subsequent or prior histories of these companies that these executives were long-lasting since subservient; Bernabei is a counter-example to this general rule.

ues for the partisanship of the bureaucracy were imputed in three cases using the mean²³.

To measure the size of the market for news, I use data on press circulation per 1,000 population from 1975. 1975 is used since there is reliable data available for this year, since later data would in certain cases be later than the early years of the broadcaster (thus implying reverse causation), and because there is some comparable data for countries which did not exist in 1975.²⁴ Newspaper circulation is used because newspapers are the medium which concentrates most on news instead of entertainment generally, because markets in radio and television have for much of the period been state monopolies or otherwise restricted markets, and because newspapers have had a historical role in setting norms for journalism, both in general and through operating as recruitment pools for companies in other media. Because newspaper circulation in Communist countries was artificially inflated, I also use a dichotomous control variable to account for this inflation²⁵

To operationalize the degree of legal protection given to the broadcaster I have developed an index of protection (Table 3.2) built on previous work by [Gilardi \(2002, 2005\)](#) and [Elgie and McMenamin \(2005\)](#).

Items in the second column - 'Appointments' - are largely drawn from [Elgie and McMenamin](#), comprising three indi-

23 These cases were Latvia, Lithuania, and Slovakia. Results from the regression without imputation did not differ significantly.

24 Data for the Baltic countries were taken from [Høyer *et al.* \(1993\)](#); data for the Czech Republic, Slovakia, Flanders and the French language community in Belgium were imputed from parent countries. It is likely that the model fit would have improved had separate 1975 data for these latter four areas been available; the Belgian French-language broadcaster has lower levels of independence than predicted, and the French language community reads fewer newspapers than Flanders; the same is true for Slovakia compared to the Czech Republic.

25 It might be thought that this control variable is in fact be an independent variable in its own right, reflecting either the legacy of a Leninist philosophy of the press (cf. [Milton, 2001](#)) or turbulence related to processes of democratization. First, for all that they were under Soviet influence, it would be a mistake, however, to think that a Leninist philosophy of the press applied equally well in Poland, Estonia and Russia; or to think that stated commitments to such a philosophy were incompatible with the development of professional norms (on which point, see [Curry, 1990](#)). Second, it is not the case that democratization-related turbulence led to inflated values of TOR or VUL: of the shortest-serving executives in each of the nine post-Communist countries included in the analysis, six started as chief executive after 1999; the remaining three started between 1991 and 1994.

Table 3.2: Index of legal protection
 PROTECTION AGAINST PROTECTION AGAINST AP-
 SANCTIONS AND REWARDS POINTMENTS

- Reporting to government
 - no reporting requirement: 1
 - annual written reporting to executive: 0.66
 - annual in-person report to executive: 0.33
 - greater than annual in-person reporting: 0
- Reporting to parliament
 - no reporting requirement: 1
 - annual written reporting to parliament: 0.66
 - annual in-person report to parliament: 0.33
 - greater than annual in-person reporting: 0
- Borrowing
 - borrowing unrestricted: 1
 - borrowing requires ministerial permission: 0
- New operations, sub-contracting
 - no requirement for ministerial approval: 1
 - require ministerial approval: 0
- State participation:
 - independent foundation: 1
 - non-majority state participation: 0.5
 - total or majority state participation: 0
- Term of service contracts
 - greater than six years: 1
 - six years: 0.8
 - five years: 0.6
 - four years: 0.4
 - three years: 0.2
 - less than three years: 0
- Mechanisms for altering funding
 - automatically uprated licence fee: 1
 - discretionally uprated licence fee: 0.75
 - advertising: 0.5
 - pluriannual grant from parliament: 0.25
 - annual grant from parliament: 0
- Term of office of first executive group
 - more than six years: 1
 - six years: 0.8
 - five years: 0.6
 - four years: 0.4
 - less than four years: 0.2
 - no fixed term: 0
- Appointing body for first executive group
 - management board members: 1
 - complex mix of executive and legislature: 0.75
 - the legislature: 0.5
 - the executive collectively: 0.25
 - one or two ministers: 0
- Dismissal of first executive body
 - dismissal not possible: 1
 - dismissal for non-policy reasons: 0.5
 - dismissal at appointing body's convenience: 0
- Term of office of second executive group
 - more than six years: 1
 - six years: 0.8
 - five years: 0.6
 - four years: 0.4
 - less than four years: 0.2
 - no fixed term: 0
- Appointing body for second executive group
 - executive director or other independent organization: 1
 - complex mix of executive and legislature: 0.75
 - the legislature: 0.5
 - the executive collectively: 0.25
 - one or two ministers: 0
- Dismissal of second executive body
 - dismissal not possible: 1
 - dismissal for non-policy reasons: 0.5
 - dismissal at appointing body's convenience: 0

cators (tenure, appointing body, and mode of dismissal) for the first and second executive bodies. An example of a first, or upper executive body, is the former Board of Governors of the BBC or the *Fernsehrat* of ZDF; an example of a second executive body is the post of Director-General, Intendant, or, more rarely, a multiple-member executive board.²⁶ The first indicator - tenure - gives the periodicity with which politicians may either sanction (refusal to re-appoint) or appoint. The second indicator - appointing body - is an indirect measure of the number of veto players involved, from a single minister to combinations of the legislature, executive and civil society.²⁷ The third indicator - gives the ease with which the particular sanction of dismissal can be applied.

Items in the first column concern sanctions or rewards exclusively. The first two items - reporting to government and reporting to parliament - refer to the psychological sanctions of repeated questioning, with greater effects assumed from in-person reporting than from written reporting, and from more frequent reporting than infrequent reporting. The next three items - borrowing, new service permissions, and state participation - are discretionary ministerial decisions which may be used as bargaining chips in order to extract concessions, or as sanctions for past actions; the periodicity, however, of these decisions depends on whether the broadcaster chooses to submit the issue for ministerial consideration. State participation is the most ambiguous of the three: one law²⁸ prevents the relevant minister from voting in the AGM, which might be thought to undermine the use of this legal provision as a sanctioning or rewarding mechanism; in other countries, the powers given to share-

26 In some cases, where the number of members was large and the methods used to appoint them divergent, I have assigned different scores for some part of the board, and averaged these methods. For example: in Italy following the passage of the 1975 reform of Rai, six members of the sixteen member administrative council were nominated by the majority shareholder (the state, coded here as the executive), whilst the remaining ten members were nominated by a parliamentary committee. The score for 'appointing body for first executive group' is therefore equal to $[(6 * 0.25) + (10 * 0.75)] / 16$.

27 It is incorrect to apply veto players theory in this way, since a focus on institutional veto points may mislead if those veto points are occupied by the same players, or if putative extra veto players have ideal points which fall inside the unanimity core (Tsebelis, 2002, pp. 26-30). Nevertheless, this faulty application is only likely to bias downwards the effects of the index of legal protection.

28 The law is the Portuguese Television Broadcasting Act, Law no. 32/2003

holders naturally varies according to national provisions on joint stock companies. The fourth item - the term of service contracts - is, again, a measure of the periodicity with which regulatory approval can be turned into a sanctioning device. Finally, the last item, the mechanisms for altering funding, is a measure of the discretion enjoyed by politicians in setting the broadcasters' year-on-year funding.

I have chosen to average each of the two columns and take the average of these two figures as my operationalization of legal protection. Alternate specifications of the index of de jure independence do not change the results appreciably. [Gran and Patterson \(2006\)](#) argue that the de facto independence of agencies depends not on the mean value of legislative guarantees of independence, but on the minimum, since politicians will attack the 'weakest link'. Yet countries which score highly on Appointments also score highly on Sanctions; the correlation between the two terms is 0.91. The specification also matches expert attempts to insulate PSBs from political pressure: the score for one model law on public broadcasting would be the second-highest in the sample, beaten only by Switzerland ([Rumphorst, 1999](#)).

3.2 METHODOLOGY

Periodicization of the broadcasters according to legislative standing may seem artificial, given the historical continuity present in the development of the market for news. Given the theoretical interest in identifying the effect of de jure independence, however, periodicization does seem necessary; as for the remaining variables which vary less over time, one can only note that "one faces continuous problems of 'aggregation' of the temporal units. . . [if] for one aspect of the research the temporal unit of reference is the legislative period, those properties/variables which can be evaluated only at the temporal level of the regime will have to be considered as constant for each legislative period internal to the regime" ([Bartolini, 1993](#), p. 148). The shortest period under consideration is the nine years of France Télévisions under loi no. 696/1974; the longest is the BBC (1944-2006).

I use multivariate ordinary least squares (OLS) linear regression to estimate the relative effects of the four potential explanatory factors listed above. The use of a dependent variable bounded between zero and one means that checks

for heteroskedasticity are necessary. I therefore report statistics for the Breusch-Pagan test for each model.

3.3 RESULTS

Table 3.3: Regression results

	Full model			Reduced model		
	coeff.	p-value	sig.	coeff.	p-value	sig.
(Intercept)	-0.119	0.665		-0.126	0.598	
Legal protection	0.322	0.087		0.411	0.020	*
log(Press circulation)	0.109	0.051		0.125	0.007	**
Polarization	0.001	0.951				
Bureaucratic partisanship	0.031	0.142				
log(Press Circulation)* PostCommunist	-0.037	0.000	***	-0.038	0.000	***
Adj R-squared	0.580			0.537		
N	36			36		

* = significant at 0.05 level.

** = significant at 0.01 level.

*** = significant at 0.001 level.

Table 3.3 shows the results of the regression analysis. The first column of data shows the full model, with all four main explanatory variables and one interaction term included. With an n of 36, this model has too high a ratio of variables to observations. It also faces problems of heteroskedasticity: the value of the Breusch-Pagan test is 12.50, which, on five degrees of freedom, is significant at the 0.05 level. It is, however, clear from the model that the partisanship of the bureaucracy and the degree of polarization add little to the model, and can safely be removed. The second column shows the reduced model, with all three terms significant at the 0.05 level. All coefficients are in the predicted direction. There is no suggestion that the model is being driven by outlying cases: the value of Cook's distance is less than 0.25 for all cases. Additionally, the problems of heteroskedasticity faced by the previous model disappear (Breusch-Pagan value of 3.5 on 3 d.f., $p=0.321$). The resulting model explains over half of the variance in PSB independence.

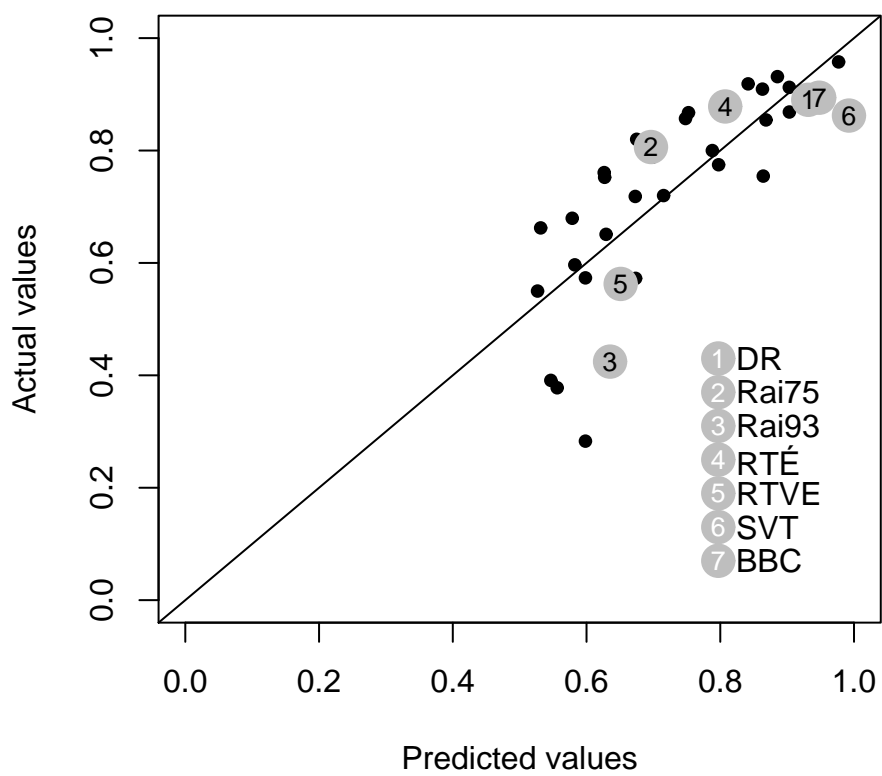
If the model is broadly correct - and if the unexplained variance is not the result of some other systematic factor - then the prospects for designing independent public service broadcasters are relatively good. Assuming average press circulation, an increase from no legal protection to full legal protection would result in an increase from negligible to almost total de facto independence. Of course, these values are never observed in real life, as every PSB law grants the broadcaster some protection. Within the range of observed values, however, the difference between the minimum De Jure score of 0.15 and the maximum of 0.82, is, nevertheless, still large.

We can understand the substantive significance of these coefficients better if we apply them to a real-world example of PSB reform. In Spain, the Zapatero government, following a report by a committee of sages, drafted a new law on RTVE establishing a single-tier board of twelve members nominated by the parliament for a non-renewable six year term, one of whom would be the President of the new corporation. The reform scores much higher than the previous law of 1980 (0.8 compared to 0.5). The likely effect of the law on RTVE's independence will be positive: from an independence score of 0.49, the mean predicted independence score would rise to 0.78 (SD = 0.068), fulfilling the intent behind the legislation of liberating RTVE from excessive governmental control.

Following [Lieberman \(2005\)](#), figure 3.1 plots the predicted versus actual values of the model for all broadcasters in this sample, with my six cases identified. Since the results of the statistical model are positive, Lieberman recommends that cases be selected which are "on the line" - that is, which lie on the 45° line where predicted values match actual values.

The graph shows that most of the cases chosen are fairly close to having $\hat{y} = y$, with Danmarks Radio, the BBC, and SVT failing slightly short of the line due to their proximity to the upper bound. Two cases fall short of the line - RTVE, and Rai between 1993 and 2004. The goal in chapters 6 and 9 will therefore be to explain why these cases should fall short of the value we would expect based on their legal standing and the level of journalistic professionalization in the two countries.

Figure 3.1: Predicted versus actual results, statistical model



4

WHO IS APPOINTED?

"The most difficult part of the meeting was when the Italians raised the issue of guarantees and minority protection. . . The Italians didn't understand how these guarantees could be achieved through government nomination, and the British didn't understand how it could be otherwise.

"But, the Minister of Posts (who appoints this body), is he not a member of the majority?", asked the Italians; "how then can minorities feel themselves to be protected?" Finally the British grasped the objection, and, smiling, responded that the Minister of Posts ceased to be merely a party representative at the moment he became a minister of the Queen (whereby "Queen" stands for "state"). Perhaps only now did the Italians truly understand, and fell silent, dismayed". ([Chiarenza, 2002](#), p. 158)

In the previous chapter I demonstrated that the greater the legal protection given to the broadcaster, the more politically independent it will be. In that chapter, I used an index which included legal protection against partisan appointments. This chapter examines such provisions and their effects.

The chapter is structured in several parts. In [4.1](#) I return to the theory set out in [Chapter 2](#), that the greater the number of veto players, the less partisan appointments will be. I then ([4.2](#)) discuss the legal provisions on appointment in each of the six countries across time, and derive predictions about the partisanship of the resulting boards. After discussing sources of data on appointees' partisanship ([4.3](#)), I demonstrate how the relationship between the number of veto players and the partisanship of appointees runs in the opposite direction to that expected: highly discretionary appointment systems of governmental nominations generate the least partisan appointees. I close by discussing reasons why this is the case.

4.1 VETO PLAYERS AND APPOINTMENTS

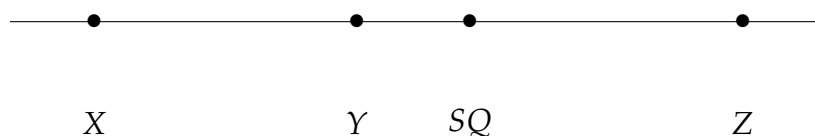
In order to demonstrate why an increased number of veto players should result in a decrease in the partisanship of appointments, it is useful to consider a simplified example showing appointments under several decision-making rules. To simplify matters, I assume that the current board of the PSB consists of one member who remains at the broadcaster if no agreement is reached on a new appointment. I also assume that only three parties — X, Y and Z — are represented in the parliament, and that these parties are unitary actors with no internal dissent. I assume further that X and Y form a coalition government with a majority but no super-majority, and that X holds the communications portfolio within the cabinet.

These parties can be represented as points in a one-dimensional political space, just as we can also represent the current board as a point in one-dimensional political space.

If the current single board member were a partisan of a particular party, it would be relatively easy to locate them in political space, since we could place them at or near the ideal point of their party. Yet how should we locate a non-partisan appointee in political space? The most non-partisan appointee would be some whose political views were so inscrutable that it would be impossible to locate them in political space. Thus, a non-partisan appointee can be plotted at the only location possible, given no further information about their political views - which is to say, at the position of the median voter.

Let us assume that the current board member is indeed non-partisan. The point SQ therefore reflects the position both of the current board and the median voter. We assume for the moment that the two government parties are to the left of SQ , although this need not be the case.

Figure 4.1: Appointment



Given this constellation of actors, who would be appointed under the different decision-making rules of ministerial, governmental, parliamentary, and parliamentary super-majority appointment?

IN THE CASE OF MINISTERIAL APPOINTMENT, there is only one veto-player - X - and they are free to appoint at their ideal point. The nominee is therefore partisan.

IN THE CASE OF GOVERNMENTAL APPOINTMENT, there are two veto players, X and Y . The appointee will thus lie somewhere on the line XY . Precisely where on the line will depend upon which party within the government has agenda-setting power. If X has agenda-setting power and can name an appointee first, X will suggest a point on the line which makes Y marginally prefer the proposed nominee to the status quo; if Y has agenda-setting power, Y will appoint at their own ideal point, and X will prefer Y to the SQ .

THE CASE OF PARLIAMENTARY APPOINTMENT is identical to the case of governmental appointment if X and Y have a parliamentary majority, and if the assumption that X and Y are unitary actors holds. If the parties were not unitary actors, then appointment is made at the position of the median legislator - which would be somewhere between Y and SQ .

IN THE CASE OF PARLIAMENTARY APPOINTMENT THROUGH A SUPER-MAJORITY, all three actors would become veto players, except that Y is absorbed by X and Z . Thus, the number of veto players remains the same, though the distance between them increases. Given that SQ lies on the line \overrightarrow{XZ} , no move away from the status quo would be preferred by both veto players, and therefore the nomination will be made at SQ - and therefore will be non-partisan.

IN THE CASE OF NOMINATION BY CIVIL SOCIETY the appointment will depend, first, upon the representativeness of the civil society organizations recognised by law, and, second, upon the specific rights granted to them. Where the recognised civil society organizations are completely

representative, their ideal point will be the same point as the median voter, and so it is likely that they will appoint a non-partisan candidate. If, however, civil society organizations are non-representative, and if they are non-representative because they have political affiliations — for example, Catholic sports clubs, or Communist trades unions (Almond, 1956; Lijphart, 1975, pp. 36 - 58) — the position at which the nomination is made will depend on the mix of civil society organizations recognized by law, and upon the way in which these organizations make their decisions.

Abstracting from these complications, if civil society organizations enjoy the full power to appoint, then they will appoint at their ideal point, which is SQ . If civil society may merely nominate the member(s) of the PSB board, it is an agenda-setter, and the eventual position of the nominee will depend on whether the nominations made by civil society organizations can be renegotiated. If nominations are take-it-or-leave-it, then civil society will nominate at its ideal point, SQ . If nominations can be renegotiated, civil society will nominate at the point at which the veto player (under some decision-making rule) closest to the SQ becomes indifferent between the current SQ and the proposed nominee. In this case, the outcome will be *at least* as close to the SQ as appointment by the equivalent decision-making rule, but without civil society nomination.

4.1.1 *Complications*

We can see from the above that the five appointment methods - ministerial, governmental, parliamentary, parliamentary super-majority, and civil society nomination - cited in the index of legal protection lead to less partisan appointments, in that order, where a non-partisan status quo exists and where the board has one sole member. This scenario, however, is unrealistic.

First, PSB boards are never single-member boards, but are made up of anything between five (Rai, 1993 - 2004) and forty-six members (ZDF supervisory board, current), and this affects how their nomination process is viewed by the parties. In the above examples, an individual partisan nominee became progressively unlikely because he or she would represent a departure from the status quo. In multiple-member boards, any *package* of appointments which repre-

sented a departure from SQ would be rejected for similar reasons; but this does not mean that all the individual members of the board would be non-partisan. Rather, the board *median* might be located at the SQ because it is evenly divided between opposing factions of, say, left and right.

How likely is it that boards would be composed of equally balanced partisans instead of several interchangeable and ostensibly neutral nominees?

This depends on who chooses board members for appointment. Compare two cases where parliament appoints nominees, but where nominees are proposed (a) by the minister and (b) by Parliament. If the minister chooses nominees, she has a choice between nominating several neutral members at SQ or nominating several partisan members at the parties' ideal points. The latter, however, may be difficult for the minister if she has no knowledge of potential candidates in other parties' circles: she might pick someone who she thinks is close to the party, but who the party rejects. Consequently she may decide to nominate several members at SQ. If, conversely, parliament both nominates and appoints the board, it will require much more time and effort for the parties to negotiate a list of neutral members than for each to nominate at their ideal point.

Thus, it may be that, the greater the number of veto players, the greater the partisanship of the board - but the less likely that any faction within the board will have a majority.

Second, PSB boards may be appointed by multiple methods. How then ought we to consider the joint effects of multiple methods? I assume here that multiple methods do not interact with each other, and that we can therefore judge the joint effect of multiple methods used in nomination by simply 'averaging' them: thus, if one member is appointed by government, and eight members appointed by parliament, this will be more constraining than if five members are appointed by government and four by parliament.

It is however possible that there may be "contamination effects" between different methods of appointment. For example, in systems where both parliament and civil society appoint members to the board (as is the case for appointments to ARD regional boards and ZDF's supervisory board), civil society boards may be more tempted to nominate more partisan appointees if they know that

politicians will also nominate partisan appointees. This may be done for a number of reasons - one might be that civil society organizations feel they will be better able to further their objectives if their partisan nominees can build coalitions or find common cause with the other partisan appointees on the board.²⁹ Or, those who appoint by one method may “compensate” for those who appoint by other methods: thus, as we shall see below, the government nominated chairperson of Sveriges Television has always been politically active prior to appointment, but the overall level of partisanship on the board is relatively low thanks to the non-partisan nominations made by other bodies. The government may therefore have been relying upon the fact that other actors operating according to different methods would not nominate a partisan board.

4.2 LEGISLATIVE PROVISIONS

4.2.1 *Italy*

Prior to the law of 1975, the appointment method for Rai was minimally regulated. The 1948 convention between the state and Rai established a seven member board, appointed by several different government ministers. There is no mention of any term limits, nor provisions for dismissal. The convention makes reference to board members who are also state bureaucrats. The size of the board gradually grew to sixteen members by 1952 and to twenty by 1965. Of these, six (later seven) were appointed by the government (Cesareo, 1970, p. 23).

The 1975 reform law (legge no. 103/75) established a sixteen-member board, of which six members would be elected by the shareholders’ assembly (and thus by IRI, the *Istituto per la Ricostruzione Industriale*, or Institute for Industrial Reconstruction, a state holding company), and ten elected by the parliamentary oversight committee, the *Commissione parlamentare per l’indirizzo generale e la vigilanza dei servizi radiotelevisivi* (CPIV). Of the ten members elected by the CPIV, four were to be chosen on the basis of nominations made by the regions - but this provision was ignored (Grisolia and Miacchitella, 1980, p. 119). In practice, a

²⁹ I thank Prof. Dieter Grimm for this point.

package deal was worked out by the parliamentary committee, which then informed the IRI president of the decision (Musella, 2007, p. 205). Appointments lasted three years, and were incompatible with membership of parliament, of the regional councils, or of related businesses. The board president was to be chosen by the board itself. The law makes no provisions for dismissal of board members, save in cases where annual costs exceeded annual income by more than ten percent, in which case the CPIV would “recognise” the situation, and appoint an emergency commission. The de facto situation was not substantially altered despite a new law governing appointments (legge no. 10 of 1985).

This system was reformed in 1993 by a “temporary law” which instead lasted eleven years. Legge no. 260/93 reduced the CdA to five members, who would subsequently be appointed jointly by the Presidents of the Chamber of Deputies and the Senate. Appointments were made for two financial years. Members could be dismissed by the Presidents of the Chamber and the Senate after a motion passed by the CPIV with a two-thirds majority. Board membership was incompatible with membership of the national parliament, European parliament, and regional or large provincial or communal councils, and appointees were to have “recognised professional prestige and independence of character”, as demonstrated in relevant fields (Art. 2).

This temporary law was finally replaced in 2004 by the Gasparri law (legge no. 112/2004). The Gasparri law actually set out two distinct methods of appointment: one method to be used following the broadcaster’s partial privatization, another to be used until that point. Since no shares in Rai have yet been sold, this second method has been used to appoint members of the board.

The current board is composed of nine members, of whom seven are appointed by the CPIV by multi-member plurality, with the remaining two members, including the board President, nominated by the Treasury Minister. The appointment of the President must be ratified by a two-thirds majority of the CPIV. Appointments are for a once-renewable three year term. Parliamentarians may be nominated but may not serve as board members (legge no. 60/1953).

The law refers to resignation and permanent incapacity of members of the CdA, but makes no provisions for their

dismissal. This has not stopped the CPIV from arrogating that power to itself, passing a motion³⁰ calling upon the Claudio Petruccioli to resign as president of Rai; this action led to two other councillors offering their resignations to the committee (Bruzzone, 2007).

4.2.2 *Spain*

In Spain, the governance regime for RTVE was originally set out by Law no. 4 of the 10th January 1980 ("De Estatuto de la Radio y Televisión"). Article six of this law establishes an administrative council for RTVE, composed of twelve members, appointed half by the Senado, half by the Congreso, by two-thirds majorities. The council is appointed anew for each legislature, amongst persons of "relevant professional merit". There are no provisions on dismissal, but membership of the council is incompatible with employment in related enterprises or in RTVE itself.

Like Ireland, the government has a role in the appointment of the director-general, but this role is much stronger than almost anywhere else:³¹ the director-general is nominated by the government "having heard" [*oido*] the Administrative Council, a provision which in practice has meant that the Council is bypassed and has only a negligible role.

Since 2006, RTVE has been governed by Law no. 17 of the 5th June 2006 ("*De la radio y la televisión de titularidad estatal*"), which, unusually, moves from a dual board system, to a single board with an executive President. As before, the twelve members of the council shall be nominated partly by the Congreso (8), partly by the Senado (4), by two-thirds majorities, but their (staggered) terms in office are now set to six years, incompatibility with political office is explicit, and two of the members are to be nominated by the two largest trades unions which have representation in RTVE.

4.2.3 *United Kingdom*

Appointments to the Board of Governors of the BBC are regulated by the most informal system of all the cases

³⁰ *Resoconto della Commissione parlamentare per l'indirizzo generale e la vigilanza dei servizi radiotelevisivi*, 24th October 2007, pp. 273-4.

³¹ Israel is one exception.

reviewed here. The provisions on appointment, such as they are, are found in successive Royal Charters to the BBC issued by the Queen. In theory, Governors are appointed by the Queen-in-Cabinet; in practice, they are appointed either by the minister responsible for the BBC (for most of the period, the Postmaster-General) or by the Prime Minister. Since 1995 the Minister has chosen from a list of nominees selected by an independent appointments panel. According to long-standing constitutional practice, parliamentarians may not normally serve as Governors.³² Governors are typically appointed for five-year terms, although this may be reduced near the expiry of the BBC Charter. Governors may be re-appointed.

4.2.4 *Republic of Ireland*

The first provisions on the composition of the RTÉ Authority were set out in the Broadcasting Authority Act 1960. The Act established an Authority of between seven and nine members to govern RTÉ. Members were to be appointed by the government for a renewable term of not more than five years. Membership is incompatible with membership of, or candidacy to, either house of the *Oireachtas* (Art. 4). According to Article 6 of the original 1960 Act, the government could unilaterally dismiss members of the Authority; after this provision was used by Jack Lynch's Fianna Fáil government in 1972 it was limited by the Broadcasting Authority (Amendment) Act 1976, passed under a Fine Gael-Labour coalition government.

Like its Spanish counterpart, the government has a role in appointing the Director-General: the Authority appoints the Director-General with the consent of the relevant minister. In practice, the Authority's input carries greater weight than in the Spanish case.

4.2.5 *Sweden*

The methods of appointing members to the boards of the various Swedish PSBs (Radiotjänst, Sveriges Radio AB,

³² There are exceptions. Harold Nicolson and Ian Fraser were both appointed to the Board despite serving as Conservative MPs thanks to the provisions of the war-time House of Commons Disqualification (Temporary Provisions) Act.

Sveriges Television) are found in successive versions of the agreement between the *Telegrafstyrelse* (Telegraph Board) and AB Radiotjänst and between the state and Sveriges Radio AB and successor companies.

For the company's first ten years (1925-1935), the board had seven members. Two members, including the chairman, were appointed by the King-in-Council; five were appointed by the annual shareholders' meeting. In practice, the press appointed three members and industry two. Following the publication of the report of the committee on radio in January 1935, and subsequent legislative compromise, the King-in-council got to appoint three members of the board (including the chairman), the *telegrafstyrelse* one member, and the annual shareholders' meeting three.

Since Radiotjänst was a joint-stock company, board members could not be appointed for more than one financial year, although members were frequently voted back in. There were no provisions for the dismissal of members from the board, although six supplementary members of the board could be called upon in case of incapacity or resignation. In 1956, the number of ordinary board members was increased from seven to eleven; the number of supplementary members was increased from six to ten.³³ Six of these members, including the chairman, were to be appointed by the King-in-Council, with the remainder appointed by the shareholders' meeting. At the same time, the company was renamed Sveriges Radio AB.

The proposal to refound Sveriges Radio as a foundation and appoint members for four year terms, made by the 1960 radio committee, was ignored by the government, which nevertheless changed the ownership structure of the company.³⁴ The reorganization gave civil society 60% of the shares in the company, with the press and industry sharing the remainder. This meant that three of the board members were now appointed by civil society movements, and one each by the press and industry.

In 1976, Sveriges Radio was split into three separate companies; these spin-off companies mirrored the structure of Sveriges Radio, until, in 1993, they were re-established under parent foundations; these parent foundations were merged three years later to become the *Förvaltningsstiftelsen*

³³ Riksdag proposition no. 90

³⁴ Proposition 1966:136

för Sveriges Radio, Sveriges Television och Utbildnings Radio, in 1996. This administrative foundation is composed of 13 members appointed by parliament, typically with political backgrounds. Members are appointed for eight years, except that the chairperson is appointed for four years. Appointments are staggered, such that half the membership of the administrative foundation is renewed one year after a Riksdag election. This administrative foundation then appoints, on a staggered basis, five of the seven members of the board of STV and SR. The managing director is an ex-officio member of the board; the remaining member, the chairperson, is appointed by the government.

4.2.6 Denmark

The two main items of legislation governing appointments are Law 215 of the 11th June 1959, which re-established Danmarks Radio (formerly *Statsradiofonien*), and Law 374 of the 10th June 1987, which substantially changed the structure of the board.

From 1959 until 1986, Danmarks Radio was governed by a council composed of between fifteen and twenty members. Three of these members were appointed by ministers: two, including the chair and deputy chair, by the Minister of Education, one by the Minister of Public Works. Ten members were appointed by the parliament as viewers' and listeners' representatives, chosen from a list of recognised associations. Finally, each party in the Folketing's finance committee appointed a member.

Board members were appointed for four year terms, and there was no incompatibility between membership of parliament and membership of the board. The only requisites were for the member appointed by the Minister of Public Works, who had to have knowledge of broadcasting technology.

The board was slightly changed by law no. 421 of the 15th June 1973. DR employees and viewers' and listeners' associations each gained two new seats on the board. By boosting the number of civil society and internal appointees, the law partially compensated for changes in the party system that occurred later that year: up until 1973, around five parties were represented in the finance committee, giving

the lay members of the board a majority; after the earthquake election of that year, between nine and ten parties were represented in the committee, giving ministerial and parliamentary appointees the same number of seats as civil society representatives.

In 1987, the council was abolished, and a new board (*bestyrelsen*) put in its place. Law no. 374 of 10th June 1987 fixed the size of the board at eleven members, of whom one - the chairman - was to be appointed by the Minister for Cultural Affairs; one appointed by DR employees, and nine appointed by the Folketing. The law also made membership on the board incompatible with membership of the Folketing.

The law was changed again in 2002. The board was reduced from eleven to ten members; the Minister for Cultural Affairs gained the power to appoint three members, including the chair; the Folketing was allowed to nominate six members (who would subsequently be formally appointed by the Minister), and staff kept a single board member.

4.2.7 *Predictions based on the above*

The three appointments processes which involve the fewest number of veto players are the processes used to appoint members of the BBC Board of Governors, the RTÉ Authority, and the Rai board between 1993 and 2004, where the number of veto players is either one or two. In the British case, ministerial appointment reduces the number of veto players to one, viz., the appointing minister. Even assuming that the decision was negotiated bilaterally between the appointing minister and the prime minister (see, for example, [Benn, 1987](#), p. 282), or brought to Cabinet, this does not alter the number of veto players given the assumption that parties are unitary actors (and given the lack of coalition government in the UK). In Ireland, the number of veto players might increase to two in the case of coalition government, yet in the ten coalition governments since RTÉ's establishment, only twice have different parties controlled the ministry responsible for RTÉ and the post of Taoiseach.³⁵

35 Conor Cruise O'Brien (Labour) was the Communications minister in the Cosgrave (Fine Gael) government; Eamon Ryan (Green) was Communications minister in the third Ahern (Fianna Fáil) government.

In the Italian case between 1993 and 2004, members of the board were appointed by the presidents of the two chambers of parliament. During this period - and in a break with precedent - the presidents of the two chambers were drawn from the governing majority, and thus were of similar political persuasions. Thus, whilst the maximum number of veto players was two, convergence of interests between the two Presidents may have led to appointments that were essentially joint decisions (Vespa, 2002, pp. 8-27).

The two appointments processes which involve the most number of veto players are the processes used to nominate members of the *consejo de administración* of RTVE between 1982 and 2006, and from 2006 onwards respectively. Both processes require a two-thirds majority in parliament to appoint board members; the later process is more constraining, insofar as there is an element of conditional agenda-setting through trade union nomination of two members, and because the total number of appointments to be made at any one time is fewer.

Almost as constraining as the Spanish processes is the Swedish process from 1993 onwards. Insofar as political involvement in appointing the members of the board is indirect (through appointment of the administrative foundation, which has no task other than appointing the members of the board), and because half of the board is renewed after a new election, it would take repeated action by a parliamentary majority over two parliaments in order to appoint at its ideal point, which is less demanding than a parliamentary super-majority but more demanding than normal parliamentary appointment.

In between these poles lie the majority of appointment methods, which use mixed methods of appointment: parliament with government input (DR from 1987 onwards; Rai from 1975 to 1993 and again from 2004); government plus civil society (SVT from 1925 to 1993); and parliament plus government plus civil society (DR from 1959 to 1987).

For those methods which use both parliamentary and governmental nomination, we can rank them in terms of the percentage of board members who can be appointed by the government (or, in the case of Italy between 1975 and 1993, by an entirely state-owned entity). Accordingly, we should expect Rai 1975 to 1993 to be the least constraining (6 of 16 members government-appointed), followed by Rai

Table 4.1: Expectations of partisanship by appointment method

Least constraining:	RTÉ; BBC;
Next least constraining:	Rai (1993) SVT/SR (1925 - 1993) Rai (1975) Rai (2004) \approx DR (1987) DR (1959)
Next most constraining:	SVT (1993)
Most constraining:	RTVE (1980); RTVE (2006)

2004 onwards (2 of 9 members government appointed), followed closely by DR from 1987 onwards (1 of 10 members government-appointed, subsequently 3 of 10).

For the Danish system between 1959 and 1987, which involves all three types of actor, we may say that it is at least as constraining as the system used in Italy after 2004, since it involves a similar ratio between governmental and parliamentary nominees, but also adds an element of civil society agenda-setting.

Finally, the most difficult system to place is the Swedish system used between 1925 and 1993, since it involves the government heavily, but also gives civil society organizations an unconditional right to appointment. Given that, since 1935, the government has been able to appoint a majority of members, the civil society members become superfluous in the event of block voting. Accordingly, I judge the Swedish appointments process to be more constraining than the four appointments methods noted at the beginning (Rai 1975 and 2004, DR 1959 and 1987), but less constraining than any of the other mixed methods systems.

We can therefore order the systems in terms of how constraining they are, and consequently in order of decreasing partisanship according to the theory set out above (Table 4.1).

4.3 DATA

What evidence would (dis)confirm our expectation that appointments at the BBC and RTÉ should be more parti-

san than appointments at Rai or RTVE? I use data on the career background of board nominees to demonstrate the partisanship of appointments, and take it as prima facie evidence that politicians are appointing agents of their partisan interest when they appoint individuals who have

- previously held or fought for elected office under the same party label as the appointing politician or party, or
- previously held a staff post within the party, or
- previously worked for an organization whose links with the party of the appointing politician or party are so close as to make it highly likely that the individual shares the same party affiliation as the appointing politician or party.

Of course, a partisan background is no guarantee of partisan behaviour, and vice versa, and the notion of partisanship is not exhausted by common party affiliation. Nevertheless, these criteria seem to be intuitively acceptable in empirically identifying partisan appointments. Note that by the third criterion, I also mean to include trades unions in those countries where unions have clear unidirectional party ties (UK, Labour; Republic of Ireland, Labour; Sweden, LO, Social Democrats), but not in those countries where ties are confused (Denmark, Italy).

Information on board membership was, in most instances, supplied directly by the broadcasters, except that information on the membership of the Rai board was taken from [Grasso \(2000\)](#), information on members of the council and board of DR was taken from successive editions of the company yearbook (1967 - 1986) and annual report (1987 - 2007), and information on the membership of the board of SR was taken from the Swedish government's *Statskalendar*.

Information on the career backgrounds of appointees was taken, in the first instance, from authoritative biographical reference works in each country: in Britain, Italy and Spain, *Who's Who*; in Sweden, *Vem är det?*; in Denmark, *Krak's Blå Bog*; and in Ireland, *Who's Who in Ireland*. The degree of coverage of appointees varied dramatically from country to country: whilst in the UK all governors of the BBC, with one exceptions, have merited an entry in *Who's Who*, one in ten appointees to SR's *styrelse* did not merit entries in *Vem är det*. Consequently, I have used press archives (Lexis-Nexis

and Sweden's Presstext) to collect information on nominees' backgrounds, and, for more recent appointments, interviews with board members. Use of newspaper sources is less than ideal, since such reporting makes no attempt to be comprehensive. Nevertheless, given that political candidacy is often a highly salient fact about an individual, one can be reasonably confident that relying on press reporting does not under-estimate the degree of political activity amongst nominees.

Whilst the partisanship of individual appointments is clearly important, it still does not present a full picture of whether politicians are attempted to stack the board with co-partisans. If board members do not all serve the same length of term, or if they can be re-appointed, it is possible that partisan appointees may outlast all of their non-partisan colleagues. To account for this, I calculate yearly averages of the partisanship of each board, understood as the percentage of members serving on the board in a given year who, at the time of their nomination, could be considered partisan.

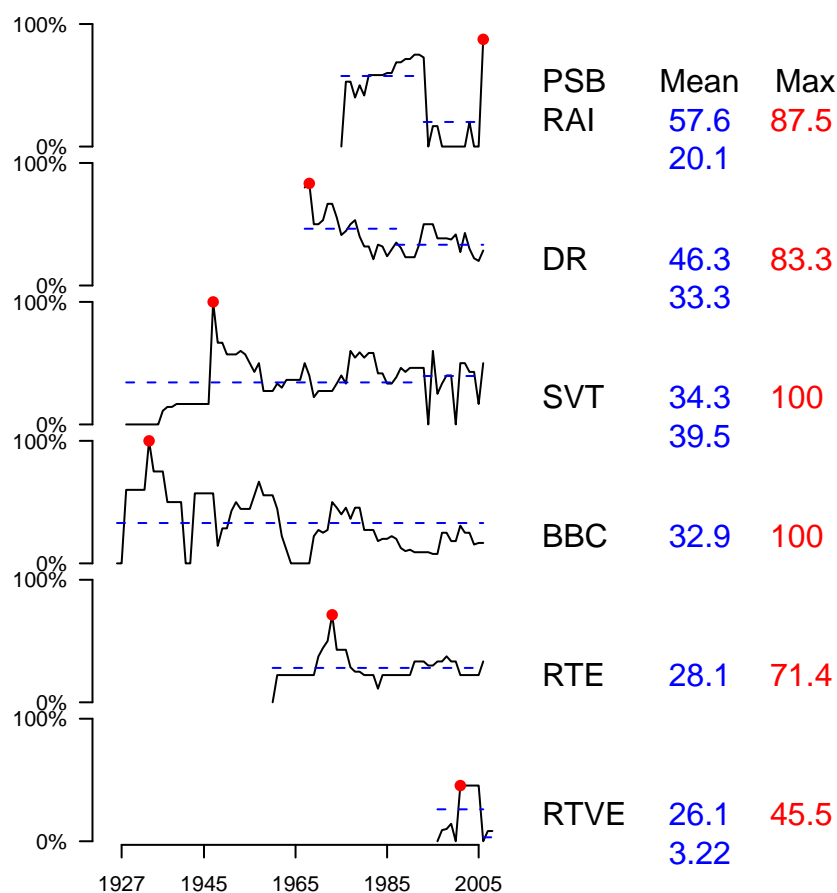
4.4 PARTISANSHIP

Figure 4.2 shows the partisanship over time of the six boards. The dashed lines indicate the appropriate means; multiple lines are drawn for boards whose appointment methods have been changed.

How well do the patterns noted in the figure match our theoretical expectations?

First, the three least constraining methods - BBC, RTÉ and Rai (1993) - have amongst the fewest partisan nominees, with partisanship between 15.3% (Rai between 1993 and 2004) and 33.3% (BBC, 1927 to 2006). The figure for the BBC may even be somewhat inflated, since it includes the war years, in which the board was cut to two members, both of whom - Harold Nicholson and Ian Fraser - were former MPs who had been appointed under special wartime measures (see footnote 32). (The only methods which resulted in less partisan boards were the two methods used in Spain. These methods were also the most constraining. I shall return to the Spanish case later, but suffice it to say that the low partisanship of the board may be a reflection not of the appointment method, but of the fact that governments could

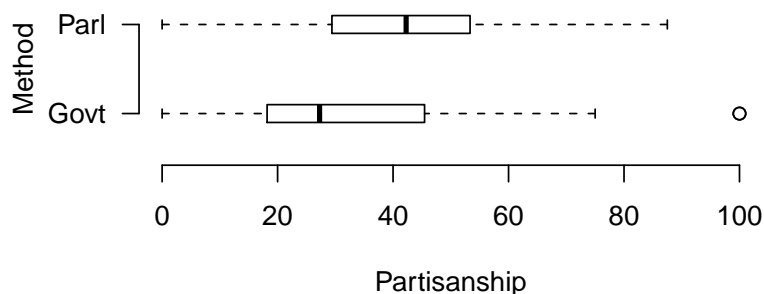
Figure 4.2: Partisanship of PSB boards



achieve content at their ideal point through appointing the director-general of the broadcaster). Second, the next least constraining method, used in Sweden between 1925 and 1993 - which also involved governmental nomination - also resulted in low levels of partisanship.

By contrast, the highest levels of partisanship, which were found in Italy between 1975 and 1993 and in Denmark between 1959 and 1987, all involved parliamentary nomination. Additionally, where, in Denmark, there was an increase in the governmental appointment element at the expense of parliament, the partisanship of the board decreased. Where there was an increase in parliamentary involvement at the expense of government (Sweden after 1993), the partisanship of the board increased. Therefore, since parliamentary nomination involves more veto players than government nomination, it seems that the relationship between veto players and the partisanship of appointments

Figure 4.3: Box-plot of mean partisanship by appointment method



operates in the reverse direction: the more veto players, the more partisan the appointments.

Beyond ‘eye-balling’ the different means for the different appointment methods, we can check whether these means are significantly different. Suppose that we can describe appointment systems as either parliamentary or governmental, and assigning mixed systems on the basis of whether they had more governmental or more parliamentary appointees. Thus, we would describe that the Danish, Spanish, the Italian system prior to 1993, and the Swedish system after 1993, can be considered as parliamentary systems of appointment, and all other systems of appointment as governmental. The mean partisanship for parliamentary systems all together is 41.4; the mean partisanship for governmental systems is 31.6; these differences in means, plotted in Fig. 4.3, are statistically significant.³⁶

This result is not entirely unexpected, even though it goes against the assumptions employed by [Gilardi and Elgie and McMenamin](#). As noted above, the greater the number of veto players, the more likely that appointments *as a whole* will not depart substantially from the status quo. However, the same logic does not apply to individual appointees within a package.

³⁶ A simple t-test gave a value of t as -3.730 on 279 degrees of freedom, which allows us to reject the null hypothesis that the two means are the same ($p=0.0002$)

4.4.1 *Partisanship in the right direction?*

We have so far assumed that all nominees with partisan backgrounds are appointed by co-partisans. However, it is possible that partisan nominees might be appointed by someone from an opposing party, whether from magnanimity or as compensation for an unrelated favour in another arena. Is there any evidence that this happens?

In Spain and Italy (during periods of parliamentary nomination), it is difficult to assess whether parties nominate co-partisans, since there are no official records of which parties nominated which board members; rather, nominees' party labels are either common knowledge or imputed by journalists who cover such issues. Nevertheless, I have found no case in which a party nominated a candidate who had been politically active for another, different party. In Italy during periods of nomination by the presidents of the two chambers of parliament, only two politically active individuals were appointed: Ettore Albertoni, a municipal official with the Lega Nord, and Alfio Marchini, former funder of the Italian Communist Party (*Partito Comunista Italiano*, PCI) and owner of the party newspaper *Unità*. Albertoni was appointed by two presidents drawn from the same coalition (Marcello Pera (FI) and Pier Ferdinando Casini (UDC)), but Marchini was appointed by presidents from the opposing coalition, Irene Pivetti (FI) and Carlo Scognamiglio.

In Ireland, of the seventeen partisan appointments made, all but three appointees were active with parties in the governing coalition. The three exceptions - Fintan Kennedy, Patrick McAuliffe, and Patricia King - were all trades unionists (with a history of support for Labour) appointed by Fianna Fáil governments.

The United Kingdom is unusual in that governments do not appoint co-partisans - or, at least, they do not appoint more from their own party than from other parties. Of the twenty-two politically active appointees named under Conservative governments, eleven had been politically active in support of Labour; three - Glyn Tegai Hughes, Juliet Rhys Williams, and Baron Gainford - in support of the Liberal party, and eight in support of the Conservative party. Conversely, of the fifteen politically active appointees named under Labour governments, a third had been active on behalf

of the Labour party, whether through the unions (Tony Young, Thomas Jackson) or in Parliament (Alan Thompson, Baroness Wootton, Baron Francis-Williams). Six had been active on behalf of the Conservative party, and three on behalf of the Liberal party.³⁷

In Denmark following the 1987 reform, only once has a party nominated someone with a history of political activity in another party: in 2006 the *Danske Folkeparti* nominated Ole Hyltoft as a member of the DR *bestyrelse*, despite the fact that Hyltoft had sat on the Social Democrat's Culture committee between 1975 and 1986, and had been a party member for 49 years. In any case, Hyltoft had left the party and drifted steadily closer to the *Danske Folkeparti* on immigration policy,³⁸ acting as a guest-speaker for their 2005 party conference.

In Sweden, of the sixteen politically active nominees appointed by socialist governments, only nine were socialists, with the other nominees drawn predominantly from the *Moderaterna*. Of the six politically active nominees appointed by non-socialist governments, all but one belonged to non-socialist groupings. Thus, although partisan appointments tend to be in the expected direction, this tendency is stronger amongst non-socialists than socialists. (This in large part is due to the appointments of 1978: see page 278).

Thus, with the exception of the United Kingdom, it is true that parties and governments appoint co-partisans, though this tendency is stronger in systems of parliamentary appointment.

4.4.2 *Partisanship in behaviour?*

What evidence suggests that partisan backgrounds lead to partisan behaviour once on the board?

In the United Kingdom, it has sometimes seemed that Governors would need to acquire a role – some role, any role – before playing a partisan role. The relationship between the Governors and management – and more particularly between the Chair and the Director-General – is, as Asa

³⁷ The remaining politically active appointees were named under the various national unity Governments of 1931 - 1945.

³⁸ See www.ole-hyltoft.dk

Briggs rightly points out, both hugely consequential and dependent on the personalities of the two men.³⁹ Charles Hill (1974, p. 77, but cf. Lusty, 1975, p. 264) creates the impression that it was only following his appointment that the Board began to *shamoderaternape* the Corporation's work:

"It soon became clear that governors' meetings were friendly, Christian-name affairs. It also became obvious that they decided very little and that a common form of so-called decision was what the governors agreed with the director-general"

John Reith notes in his memoirs that the board of the British Broadcasting Company had given him extraordinary latitude:

"I had thought that the chairman Sir William Noble might be around a good deal, and when Noble came to see me before the first board meeting on January 4, 1923, I asked him about this. 'Oh no', he replied, 'we're leaving it all to you. You'll be reporting at our monthly meetings and we'll see how you're getting on'" (quoted in Simon, 1953, pp. 49-50)

Reith managed to give the predominance of management official sanction by having the Chairman of the Board, John Whitley, draft what came to be known as the Whitley Document, which operated from the early thirties until 1952:

"The Chairman and Governors of the BBC act primarily as Trustees to safeguard the Broadcasting Service in the national interest. Their functions are not executive, their responsibilities are general and not particular, and they are not divided up for purposes of departmental supervision. The suggestion sometimes made that Governors should be appointed as experts or specialists in any of the activities covered by the Broadcasting Service is not regarded as desirable... With the DG they discuss and then decide upon major matters of policy and finance, but they leave the execution of that policy and the general administration of the service in all its branches to the DG and his competent officers.

³⁹ No woman has yet been appointed Director-General.

The Governors should be able to judge of the general effect of the Service upon the public, and, subject as beforementioned, are of course finally responsible for the conduct of it" (reprinted in [Simon, 1953](#), pp. 49-50).

Given their role, early Governors were thus "a miscellaneous collection, often mediocre in quality, and their influence on the policy and practice of the BBC of no great account" (Ernest Davies MP, quoted in [Simon, 1953](#), p. 65). By the eighties, governors had acquired a stronger role, but even then the idea that there would be partisan splits in the board was inconceivable ([Fuller, 1991](#), p. 100).

In Ireland the RTÉ Authority has limited influence, with board meetings of limited duration once a month and board members who have often acted as rubber stamps for decisions taken by the executive board, particularly during the first years of the Authority and more recently ([Quinn, 2001](#), pp. 8, 15; [chi, 1967](#)); in the seventies, however, board members did occasionally take interest in personnel matters ([fog, 1978](#)), with one board member asking for a particular journalist to be dismissed because they had " 'overstepped' the bounds of impartiality"; [Dowling et al. \(1969, p. 28\)](#) argue that this (unnamed) board member was acting as a Fianna Fáil 'hatchet man', though they do not suggest that he was acting on orders from the party.

In Sweden, divisions of interest on the board were more common, but these were less partisan differences than differences of opinion between the various civil society organizations represented on the board. Director-General Olof Rydbeck judged that board members "had the job of taking care of their taskmasters' interests, and only after that to attend to the interests of the company they had entered" ([Thurén, 1997](#), p. 109), but that this largely concerned the interests of the press and of industry. Indeed, the two board members whom Rydbeck cites as exercising independent judgement - Erik Lönnroth and Lars Gylennsten - were both government appointees.

Chairmen had the potential to be partisan, particularly during Rydbeck's time on the board, but in general, "the understanding of the Social Democratic government was: "now we'll appoint someone who can see that all these issues within SR are settled. Someone has to fix what's

going on here"⁴⁰ — there was little desire for control, rather than risk-avoidance.

In Denmark, formal votes on the board were rare, according to political scientist and DR board member Karen Siune, except on the issue of the appointment of the director-general, where there was some party-line voting. More relevant was the tendency of “more traditional politicians, even former members of parliament... [to] behave more like traditional political animals” and voice their disagreements with DR in public,⁴¹ a tendency which continues today, particularly with board members appointed by the *Danske Folkeparti*, who have openly claimed to act in their party’s interest (Nissen, 2007, p. 225). During more recent years, under the chairmanship of Finn Aaberg, great care was taken to ensure unanimity in preference to oversized 8-3 or 9-2 majorities which would have exposed the two most left-wing members of the board (Preben Sepstrup and Poul Erik Magnussen) (Nissen, 2007, p. 70, and interview with Nissen), but that this policy was not so closely followed when Jørgen Kleener became chair.

In Italy, partisan voting patterns on the board have been *de rigueur*. Massimo Pini (1978, pp. 16-17) recounts how, at the first meeting of the new board following the 1975 reform, there was a fight - along partisan lines - about the order of the meeting, and the two communist members of the board left the room. After this, battles occurred on the nomination of news editors (between centre-left and the Communist representatives), over an internal reorganization (Communists, Liberals and Republicans voting against), and eventual resignation of the Christian Democratic members due to an unrelated shift in power within the factions within the party (Pini, 1978, pp. 33, 67, 176). This pattern has continued since that time: the most recent nominations for posts in Rai were held up for three months to avoid provoking clashes on the board.⁴²

In Spain, the board’s role has been too limited to afford much room for partisan disagreement; in its most important task, the nomination of the director-general, the board has been routinely circumvented (see page 173).

⁴⁰ Interview with Oloph Hansson and Jan-Olof Gurinder.

⁴¹ Interview with author.

⁴² ANSA, “Rai: Garimberti, rispetto Napolitano, eviterò scontro nomine”, 1st July 2009.

4.5 CONCLUSION

The data above demonstrate that the assumptions used in previous literature on independent non-majoritarian institutions (INMIs) do not work in the case of appointments to the boards of public service broadcasters: moves from governmental or ministerial nomination to parliamentary nomination do not lead to a reduction in the partisanship of appointments. Rather, they result in greater partisanship, as politically active appointees are nominated to grease the wheels of the staffing procedure. These differences in the background of appointees matter, since they affect behaviour on the board. The more partisan the board's background, the more likely they are to disagree on major issues, impeding the work of the broadcaster and reducing its potential to defend itself from intervention.

The increased partisanship of appointees named under systems with multiple veto players was partially foreseeable given theory. More surprising are the low levels of partisanship of governmental or ministerial appointees. Why should this appointment method not lead to nominees who are equally, if not more, partisan?

I have suggested that this results from the fact that PSB boards have multiple members, and that governments find it easier to appoint several members at *SQ* and harder to appoint several members at the parties' ideal points, whilst for parliament the reverse is true. A balanced package of partisan nominees is much more difficult for a government to achieve, since ministers are far less likely to have knowledge of nominees who share the ideal points of parties not their own. Any such balanced package would run the risk of being misperceived or not recognised by other parties. This, indeed, happened in Italy in 1984, when Romano Prodi – then president of the state holding corporation IRI and member of the Christian Democratic party (*Democrazia Cristiana*, DC) – sought to nominate six Rai board members, consonant with the law but not with political practice. Then prime-minister Bettino Craxi told Prodi that he should do as he wished, but that he would in any event “consider your six names as DC nominees, even if they should have a Socialist party card in their pocket” (Musella, 2007, p. 252).

These differences in behaviour are probably over-determined. Parliamentary nomination tends to be associated with a

shorter term length for board members, and a shorter term length reduces the possibility that board members will “go native”: that is, adopt the outlook and customs of the institution to which they have been nominated (rather than retaining the outlook and approach of the institution by which they have been nominated). Board members who do go native will ipso facto be more likely to share an outlook on agenda items, and also more likely to accept management proposals if management has a dominant role in determining the outlook of the institution.

In sum,

- whilst theory suggested that systems of parliamentary nomination would have less partisan appointees than systems of governmental nomination,
- this is not in fact the case: systems of parliamentary nomination have more partisan nominees than systems of governmental nomination;
- this holds whether one considers differences between countries or, for those countries which have changed between parliamentary and governmental nomination, if one considers differences over time;
- this finding suggests that board appointments are not considered singly, but rather as packages of balanced-but-partisan nominees – that is, balanced according to the forces in parliament at the time
- Boards composed of balanced-but-partisan nominees are less likely to reach unanimous decisions, particularly on appointments. In chronic cases (such as Italy), this may lead to paralysis of the company, as numerous posts go unfilled.

WHO CONTROLS THE PURSE-STRINGS? WHO ASKS THE QUESTIONS?

Some form of revenue stream is a *sine qua non* for public broadcasting. The composition of this revenue stream differs from broadcaster to broadcaster: some draw principally from commercial revenue, including advertising revenue; some draw from state grants; and some draw from licence fee revenue. Sources of revenue are mixed, and their modalities differ: licence-fee or grant settlements may be concluded for one year at a time or for several; they may be explicitly indexed to inflation or not; and the decision on funding levels may be taken by more actors or fewer.

Not all of these sources of complexity are present in the reduced sample of six broadcasters that I consider here. Five of the six broadcasters are funded predominantly by licence-fee (TVE is the exception, being predominantly funded by advertising). Of these five, four derive the lion's share of their income from the licence fee (Rai derives almost half of its income from advertising). Of these four, three have had long-standing commitments from government to negotiate multi-annual funding settlements (RTÉ's licence fee funding has only recently been given such guarantees).

These differences do not interest us because of their effects on the ability of public broadcasters to develop a broadcasting strategy, to budget effectively, or because they do or do not deliver 'enough' money to the broadcaster — or at least, they do not directly interest us because of these effects. Rather they are important because they affect how politicians can alter the revenue stream of the broadcaster, and how politicians can use such alterations to intervene in the broadcaster's work, thereby securing better coverage.

The effect of different funding arrangements on the independence of agencies is unclear. We might start by considering

the two diametrically opposed methods of full state grants and full commercial funding. These cases are opposed in that they permit politicians full and negligible discretion over funding respectively. In the case of full state funding where the amount of the grant paid to the broadcaster is decided by one or more politicians, then politicians could, in theory, eliminate all funding for the broadcaster — or at least threaten to do so. Faced with such a threat, the broadcaster might have to acquiesce to any demands for better coverage, in the process forswearing the broadcaster's independence. Conversely, complete commercial funding only allows a politician to determine the broadcaster's funding only in the extreme case where she can affect the advertising decisions of numerous commercial firms.

Although considering these two polar cases suggests that commercial funding is preferable (from the point of view of independence) to state grants, does it necessarily follow that with any mixture of the two, more commercial funding leads to greater independence? Commercial income, whilst not set by politicians, is volatile for its own reasons. A mixed funding model might induce broadcasters to seek greater state funding when commercial revenues decline. This would mean funding negotiations conducted at a time of weakness for the broadcaster, in which concessions might more easily be extracted, and would in any case make it harder to argue against discretionality at some later point for less benign reasons. Additionally, to the extent that the presence of advertising on public service broadcasting screens undermine the broadcaster's 'argument from distinctiveness' for funding from the public purse, reliance on commercial income may legitimate cuts in the broadcaster's funding which may, in fact or in perception, be aimed at influencing the broadcaster. Thus, we might say that independence does not increase straightforwardly with the percentage of income derived from commercial sources.

Equally, there are good reasons for thinking a system of licence fee funding would lead to greater independence from political pressure than a system of funding derived from state grants, since the latter permits full discretion over the broadcaster's revenue (ignoring for the moment additional sources of income), whilst the former only permits the politician to set the price of a licence fee, but not how many people pay such a licence fee.

Although the Australian Broadcasting Corporation (and those who have studied it) has, however, maintained that the licence fee, which funded the broadcaster until 1948, never protected the broadcaster from political interference, and that the system of annual government grants, which funded the broadcaster from 1948 onwards, was entirely compatible with “independence in programming policies” (Inglis and Brazier, 1983, p. 187, 328), our theoretical expectation is that funding systems which in principle allow greater discretion to politicians will be associated with lower independence, and more specifically that this association will run through the actual or threatened use of this discretionality to reward or sanction the broadcaster. How can we assess this expectation in practice?

In the rest of this chapter, I analyze licence fee funding in the five countries studied, and identify any cuts or jumps in funding which could lead us to conclude that there has been sanctioning or rewarding behaviour going on. By cuts or increases I mean changes in the real, rather than nominal, value of the licence fee. The distinction between nominal and real is important in this context: Broadcasting is more subject to inflation than most industries, since inputs in television and radio production are often labour-intensive. Thus, I may talk about a ‘cut’ in funding, without thereby implying at any time that a politician has acted so as to decrease the broadcaster’s funding. This, I suggest, is only right, and represents a species of ‘malign neglect’, which we invoke when we talk about the government ‘starving’ an organization of funds.

Use of the words ‘cut’ and ‘jump’ (rather than, say, ‘decline’ or ‘increase’) suggests that changes in funding must be of some magnitude to be considered as potential sanctions or rewards. The real value of the licence fee changes all the time, not just due to changes in the inflation rate, but also due to annual changes in the nominal rate. Which of these changes ought to be considered sufficiently large? Here I suggest that a change be considered ‘sufficiently large’ if the difference would be unlikely to come about if the changes were drawn from a normal distribution. This criterion permits the use of statistical tools — in particular, analysis of variance — to probe for such changes.

Changes can, of course, be considered over different periods — year-on-year changes, five-yearly changes, or changes over some other period. Year-on-year changes are, however, too

variable to distinguish genuinely political jumps or cuts in funding from extreme fluctuations. Consequently, I sum the real percentage change per government, and calculate the mean. Following this, one can calculate an analysis of variance to compare the mean change by government, and ask whether the difference in means is statistically significant: that is, whether the increase (decrease) is unlikely to have resulted from chance alone.

This method has the consequence that the same change in absolute terms may be considered as a sudden jump or cut in one country, but considered as a normal fluctuation in a second country if the variance of annual changes is much greater there. I consider this possibility below where I discuss the general volatility of licence fee values. However, when attempting to identify politically induced cuts or increases in funding, it may make sense to look only at relatively, not absolutely large increases, since it may be easier to (threaten to) sanction or reward the broadcaster if the (threatened) sanction or reward differs in some way from what the broadcaster might normally get.

This method also treats means as timeless. Again, this approach might be misleading if year-on-year (or biennial, or triennial) changes were autocorrelated across time. That is, if high increases one year led to lower increases in the following year (or the year after, or the year after that), analysing these changes independently might lead us to ignore certain structural features of the data. In fact, this risk is not substantiated: Durbin-Watson tests on the various year-on-year changes showed that twelve of the fifteen sets of licence fee changes were not auto-correlated.⁴³

One final assumption must be clarified before proceeding to the data: the assumption in taking the mean of annual changes by government is that governments have immediate discretionary power over the value of the licence fee. This assumption may not be appropriate where multi-year agreements exist, and where the period of those agreements extends beyond the term of any single government. Thus, an incoming government which inherits a previous government's plan to dramatically decrease (increase) the real value of the licence fee may follow that plan, even though it may bear the broadcaster no ill-will.

43 The three exceptions were the cost of the colour television licence fee in the UK, and the cost of radio and black and white television licences in Denmark.

5.1 DATA ON FUNDING

Data on the nominal cost of the licence fee were gathered from various sources: in Italy, from repeated ministerial decrees;⁴⁴ in Sweden, from Åman *et al.* (1965, p. 479-481), Statens Kulturråd and Statistiska Centralbyrån (1981, p. 325) and Various (2005, p. 93); in Denmark, from DR's website;⁴⁵ in the United Kingdom, from <http://www.radiollicence.org.uk/costlicence.html>; and in Ireland, from newspaper coverage in the *Irish Times*. These nominal values were then deflated using consumer price indices.⁴⁶

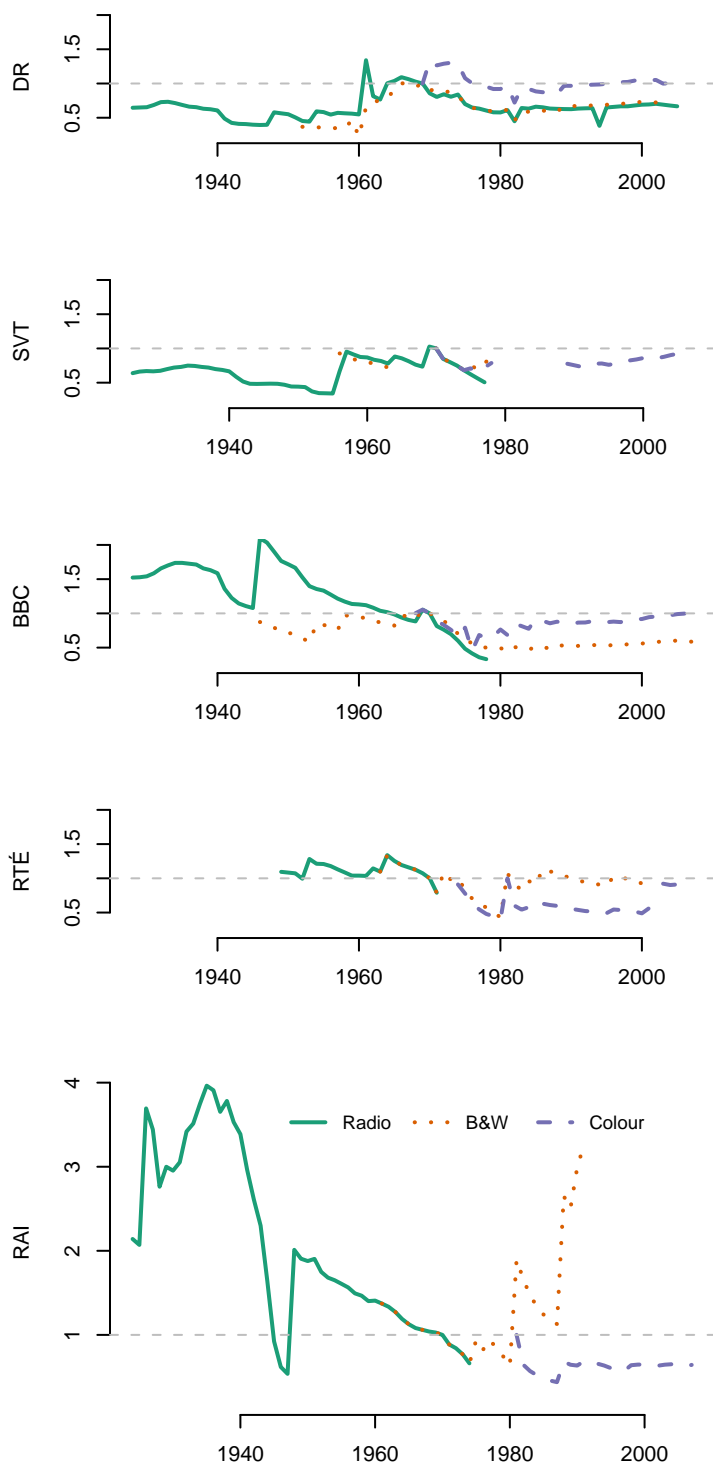
Figure 5.1 thus shows the real value of the three different kinds of licence fee (Radio, black and white (B&W) television, and colour television) for the five broadcasters. The baseline year is 1970 except for colour television licences in Ireland and Italy, where the baseline year is 1981. The baseline year was chosen because all three types of licence fee were typically in operation at this time, not because broadcasters enjoyed an 'appropriate' or 'desirable' level of licence-fee funding at this time. Thus, were the licence fee to be constant in real terms from this baseline year onwards, it would not mean that the broadcaster was not being starved of funds. The data cover the years from the broadcaster's foundation, or from the introduction of a new licence fee type, to the present day, except that there is no data for the value of the RTÉ licence fee for radio from before 1950, and there are gaps in the data for Sweden in the late seventies and early eighties.

44 No. 29373 of the 18th December 2007; no. 24789 of the 15th December 2006; no. 20341 of the 30th November 2005; no. 16294 of the 20th December 2004; no. 13061 of the 22nd December 2003; no. 10281 of the 20th December 2002; no. 18919 of the 30th November 2001; no. 1383200 of the 13th December 2000; no. 1354200 of the 13th December 1999; no. 1373700 of the 16th December 1998; no. 42200 of the 8th January 1998; no. 10172400 of the 29th November 1996; no. 959100 of the 20th December 1991; no. 869200 of the 20th December 1990; no. 938500 of the 27th December 1989; no. 478600 of the 4th July 1987; no. 671100 of the 30th November 1984; and no. 528600 of the 12th August 1980.

45 <http://www.dr.dk/OmDR/Licens/Licenstal/20061009151903.htm>

46 For Italy, ISTAT (http://www.istat.it/prezzi/precon/rivalutazioni/val_moneta_2007.html); for Sweden, from the Riksbank (<http://www.riksbank.com/templates/Page.aspx?id=27404>); for Denmark, from Statbank (<http://www.statbank.dk/statbank5a/SelectVarVal/Define.asp?Maintable=PRIS9&PLanguage=1>); for Ireland, from the Central Statistics Office ; and for the United Kingdom, from National Statistics (<http://www.statistics.gov.uk/CCI/article.asp?ID=1296>).

Figure 5.1: Real value of licence fees over time



Before examining changes in the value of the licence fee according to government, we can examine certain patterns in the value of the fee over time, some of which are already evident in the graph. The first of these patterns is gradually declining volatility: major changes in the real value of the licence fee are typically confined to the period before the nineteen sixties, including the dramatic decline in the real cost of the Rai radio licence fee (and subsequent price hike), a post-war increase in the cost of the BBC radio licence fee, and an increase in the cost of the SVT licence fee concomitant with the introduction of licence fees for B&W television. The only other dramatic spike in the real cost of the licence fee comes from eighties Italy, where the real cost of the B&W television licence fee increased dramatically prior to being phased out — which tends to suggest that the price increases had less to do with increasing the broadcaster's real income and more to do with encouraging consumers to purchase new television sets.

The second pattern, perhaps less obvious, is of a difference in volatility between broadcasters. In particular, the two broadcasters who rely on commercial revenues for a considerable portion of their income have licence fees which are more volatile than those who predominantly rely on licence fee revenues alone. The two Scandinavian broadcasters have the least volatile licence fees. These differences can be 'eyeballed', but can also be shown mathematically. If we take as our measure of volatility the average of differences between consecutive years, then Rai and RTE have the most volatile licence fees, SVT and DR the least and second least volatile licence fees respectively. This pattern remains the same for three- and five-year lags.

Thus, volatility seems at least to have some passing relationship with the method of funding, with greater reliance on licence fee funding being associated with lower volatility. Are there similar relationships between method of funding and the presence or absence of sudden cuts or increases in funding levels aggregated by government?

To test this, I perform an analysis of variance (Anova) on each type of licence fee by government, the results of which are seen in Table 5.1. As can be seen, we cannot claim that governments in the UK differ significantly in how they raise or lower the real value of the licence fee, although we could claim this at the 10% level of significance for the

B&W licence fee; the same is true for Denmark. For Ireland, the value of the colour and B&W licence fees does depend on government; the same is true for Sweden. Finally, in Italy, the value of the colour licence fee varies according to government.

From the results shown in Table 5.1, there are no good grounds for suspecting politically-induced changes in licence fee level in the UK or Denmark; for the remaining countries, there are differences in the changes to the licence fee which differ across governments in ways that are *statistically* significant. Are they then *substantively* significant, and can they be interpreted as politically-induced?

In Ireland, examination of the coefficients for each government for the value of the B&W licence fee shows that only one government is associated with a change — in this case, an increase — in the licence fee — the 17th government, formed by Fine Gael and the Labour party. Yet this government came into office half-way through the year.

Looking at the coefficients for the colour licence fee, all governments are statistically significantly associated with changes in the value of the licence fee, but the only two governments associated with *substantively* significant changes are the above-mentioned 17th government, and its equally short-lived successor, a bare-minority Fianna Fail government under Charles Haughey. The former increased the licence fee dramatically; the latter did nothing whilst inflation ate into the real cost of the licence fee.

In Sweden, changes in the real value of the black and white licence fee, by government, come down to a comparison between the changes enacted by the social-democratic government in office from 1958, and the changes enacted by the right-wing government in office between 1977 and 1982 — yet in this case missing data means that the comparison is between the average change from multiple years of social-democratic government, and a single increase under right-wing government.

Data problems also plague examination of the value of the colour licence, which involves a comparison between alternating right-wing and social democratic governments. The Palme and Carlsson governments were not associated with changes in the licence fee that were significantly different from normal. Of the remaining governments, the

Table 5.1: Analysis of variance in licence fee changes by government

Country	Variable		<i>df</i>	SS	F-value	P-value
Sweden	Radio	Government	7	0.06	1.3	0.27
		Residuals	42	0.3		
	B&W	Government	2	0.03	6.13	0.01
		Residuals	13	0.03		
	Colour	Government	4	0.04	8.87	0
		Residuals	20	0.02		
Denmark	Radio	Government	18	0.1	0.26	1
		Residuals	58	1.22		
	B&W	Government	14	0.06	0.55	0.88
		Residuals	37	0.31		
	Colour	Government	10	0.09	1.02	0.45
		Residuals	25	0.21		
UK	Radio	Government	6	0.14	0.87	0.53
		Residuals	43	1.17		
	B&W	Government	6	0.05	2.2	0.06
		Residuals	54	0.19		
	Colour	Government	4	0.03	0.99	0.42
		Residuals	34	0.27		
Ireland	Radio	Government	3	0.02	0.64	0.6
		Residuals	18	0.21		
	B&W	Government	10	0.52	4.17	0.00
		Residuals	26	0.32		
	Colour	Government	9	0.58	52.97	0.00
		Residuals	21	0.03		
Italy	Radio	Government	11	1.49	1.57	0.15
		Residuals	35	3.02		
	B&W	Government	12	1	0.41	0.94
		Residuals	17	3.43		
	Colour	Government	9	0.13	3.21	0.02
		Residuals	16	0.07		

right-wing governments are associated with slightly higher increases in the licence fee — a large increase in 1978, and a more moderate increase under the Bildt government.

In Italy, again all governments are associated with changes in the value of the licence fee; yet only five of the nine governments in this period are associated with changes greater than two percent: the Fanfani government of 1982-3, the seventh Andreotti government (increase); the Amato and Ciampi governments (decreases); and the first Berlusconi government.

Thus, the evidence for governments using the licence fee as a source of leverage is limited. This conclusion itself need not be surprising: of the different categories of funding described in the index of de jure independence, licence fee funding was the top-ranked category, and thus the most likely to conduce to independence. The fact that we have seen little variation may therefore be due merely to the fact that we have only compared broadcasters within this category; were the comparison to be extended to other broadcasters with different (government-influenced) funding mechanisms our conclusions might be different.

What we have observed, however, is a large difference in the year-to-year variance of the value of the licence fee, with certain broadcasters (RTÉ and RAI) having the most volatile funding. In part, this may be due to the fact that both these broadcasters are funded by advertising in addition to licence fee funding. Governments may therefore not bear the full cost, in terms of public appeal, of decreases in funding, which could plausibly be attributed to shortfalls in the advertising sector.

5.2 PARLIAMENTARY QUESTIONING

Parliamentary questioning can be an effective and severe psychological sanction. This has been repeatedly demonstrated in that most powerful of upper chambers, the US Senate, where, to take just one recent example, banking executives have been subjected to repeated admonishment for speculative trading.⁴⁷

⁴⁷ Nor is this a new phenomenon: the Glass-Steagall Act of 1933 resulted from extremely similar hearings in what was then the Senate Banking and Currency Committee.

This kind of questioning is likely either a form of expressive action, where legislators voice their anger on behalf of their constituents, or a form of instrumental action aimed at vote-seeking, where legislators voice synthetic anger in order to look good for their constituents. It is unlikely to be a form of instrumental action aimed at chastising an unruly agent of political principals.

Nevertheless, parliamentary questioning can be used as a sanctioning device in order to reduce the independence of an agent. Indeed, this assumption was the reason why items on reporting to parliament were included in the index of legal protection described in chapter 3. However, it does not follow from this that parliamentary questioning is, in point of fact, used to sanction; nor still that the kind of repeated questioning which could be interpreted as a form of sanctioning is more likely where, as assumed in chapter 3, reporting to parliament is more frequent. This chapter aims to substantiate these claims.

The kind of parliamentary questioning which could be construed as a form of psychological sanctioning is likely to include: highly detailed questioning which asks about minor and/or specialised parts of the broadcaster's operation; questioning which takes as a stimulus specific broadcasts or specific actions taken by the broadcaster, and in particular seeks retrospective justification of specific actions; and questioning which is politically germane — that is, questioning which concentrates on specific broadcasts, actions or policies which have some impact on political competition, or which are viewed as having such an impact. Conversely, parliamentary questioning which is unlikely to be construed as a form of psychological sanctioning is likely to include: questioning about broad aspects of the broadcaster's operation; questioning which is interested more in prospective actions of the broadcaster than retrospective justification; and questioning which is not germane to politics.

Parliamentary questioning of either kind can be exercised in the plenary or in a parliamentary committee. If parliamentary questioning of public broadcasters happens in the plenary, then it is indirect: questions are addressed to the relevant minister, who, if he answers at all, answers on the basis of information supplied to him by the broadcaster. Indirect questioning may still act as a form of sanctioning, either because the minister adopts the sanctioning intent of the questioner, or because of other indirect effects, such as

the negative effect of having awkward questions and still more-awkward answers rebroadcast by the media. Parliamentary questioning exercised in committee is, however, more relevant for the purposes of the present study, in particular since we wish to study variation in reporting requirements, and since it is likely that the traditions and rules which regulate questioning in the plenary will differ greatly between countries, making a more focused comparison difficult.

The parliamentary committees in the six countries examined here in depth vary along two principal dimensions. First, they vary in their degree of specialization — from committees whose sole task is to supervise the public broadcaster (Spain, Italy), to committees which deal with cultural issues more generally (Sweden, Denmark), to committees which shadow ministerial jurisdictions and oversee the broadcaster only contingently (United Kingdom, Republic of Ireland). Second, they vary in their frequency of meeting, from fortnightly, in the case of the Italian committee, to those committees which meet on an as-necessary basis.

5.3 THE MEDITERRANEAN COUNTRIES

The two Mediterranean countries are unusual in that both have dedicated committees which supervise the public service broadcaster. The form of these committees has, however, changed over time.

In Spain, the law of 1980 which regulated RTVE in the post-transition period also established a parliamentary committee to oversee RTVE. This committee was composed of twelve members, drawn exclusively from the lower chamber of the Spanish parliament, and with parties represented in rough proportion to their strength in the parliament. After 2006, with the passage of the law reforming RTVE, this committee has been replaced by a bicameral committee, composed, again, of twelve ordinary members. It should be noted, however, that both committees have a very large number of supplementary members (*vocales*, rather than *portavoces*). The new committee is also considered a temporary committee, whilst its predecessor was a permanent committee.

In Italy, the reform law of 1975 created a bicameral parliamentary committee, the *Commissione parlamentare per*

l'indirizzo generale e la vigilanza dei servizi radiotelevisivi (CPIV) (Parliamentary commission for oversight of radio and television services). The CPIV replaced a much weaker committee which had been established in 1947 to ensure Rai's impartiality and objectivity. The committee is composed of forty members, drawn equally from the Chamber and the Senate. In a difference to the Spanish committee, all of these members are considered equal members; that is, none of them are supplementary members.

The party membership of both the Spanish and Italian oversight committees is proportional to the parties' strength in the Parliament as a whole, though this has different effects in the two parliaments as a result of the more majoritarian character of the Spanish electoral system.

The Italian committee tends to meet more often than its Spanish equivalent. Whilst article 11 of the CPIV's regulations state that the committee should normally meet every fortnight, the CPIV sat more than 200 times during the XIVth legislature. This figure — which does not include meetings of the sub-committee dealing with public access television — is equivalent to roughly one meeting every ten days, which in turn is roughly equivalent to one meeting every week that parliament is in session. By contrast, the Spanish committee meets every month that the Parliament is in session, which means that it typically meets between seven and nine times a year.

With more sessions per year, the Italian committee also has more opportunities to question a wider range of witnesses. Indeed, this is the major difference between the two committees: whilst the Spanish committee limits itself to calling the director-general of RTVE, the Italian committee meets with a wide range of actors within Rai, including those directly involved in programme-making. In general, every meeting of the Spanish committee involved questions to the director-general of RTVE, obliging her to visit the Parliament on at least half-a-dozen occasions during the year. For the Italian committee, visits by the director-general of Rai were at least as common as visits of the RTVE presidente were to the Spanish committee (at almost nine visits a year, for a total of 36 appearances during the four and a half years of the XIVth legislature), but were supplemented by visits of the President of the broadcaster (25 appearances, often, but not exclusively together with the Director-general, but sometimes with other board members), the various channel

directors (three times for each director), the directors of the various telegiornale (two times for each director), as well as directors of other services of interest to the Parliament (for example, the directors of the parliamentary service and of the regional news service). In a final indication of the depth of the CPIV's scrutiny, the committee even interviewed three presenters of current affairs shows — Bruno Vespa, Maurizio Costanzo, and Maurizio Mannoni — for their views on the current state of pluralism within Rai.

Given the frequency with which both committees meet, and the fact that their principal witnesses are directly involved in the day-to-day operations of the respective broadcasters, it should come as no surprise to know that the type of questioning in each committee is fairly detailed. The Congreso website lists each individual question asked during the hearings of the Spanish oversight committee. With around twenty-five questions per hearing, many of the questions deal with specific issues. Some deal with micro-sectional issues, such as the siting of transmitter stations in individual questions, but many others deal with specific decisions regarding RTVE coverage. Taking the VIIth legislature — the last before reform — as typical, we see at least four questions asking the director-general about specific decisions regarding news coverage:⁴⁸

Considerations which led the Director-General of RTVE to censure information services covering the alternative demonstrations held in Barcelona during the procession of the Armed Forces on the 27th May 2000

Criteria established by the news service of RTVE prioritizing the clashes between the police force and certain demonstrators, and censuring the numerous peaceful alternative demonstrations [at the same instance]

Reasons why RTVE censured two announcements from the Aragonese government concerning the National Water Plan

Opinion of the Director-General of RTVE over TVE's coverage of the November debate and censure motion in the Parliament of the Canary Islands

The Italian parliament does not keep track of individual questions asked in parliamentary committee, and indeed

⁴⁸ All questions collected from the Congreso website.

perhaps it is correct to do so, since many of the interventions made by members of the CPIV do not resemble questions so much as verbal harangues followed by an opportunity for comment. Emblematic is the third meeting of the CPIV following the general election of 2001. In its previous meeting, on the 6th November, the CPIV had invited Rai's President and Director-general to present Rai's outlook and plans for the coming years. The presentation, largely given by director-general Claudio Cappon, had gone over the time allotted for the commission's meeting, and the meeting was reconvened a week later. The presentation dealt with the company's financial situation in great detail, and included reference to Rai's project to sell its transmission network to the American company Crown Castle, a project which would later be vetoed by Communications Minister Maurizio Gasparri on contentious grounds. Notwithstanding this — and notwithstanding the fact that the current board was thought to be friendly to the parties of the left, now in opposition — the opposition members of the committee chose to ignore completely the content of Cappon's remarks, and instead raise allegations of censure. Communist senator Franco Giordano chose to ask Cappon and Rai President Zaccaria whether they thought the decision not to screen a no-global demonstration of the previous Saturday was merited:⁴⁹

GIORDANO (Rif.Com). Signor Presidente. . . Benetting from the presence of President Zaccaria, and leaving aside questions concerning Rai's future development, I wonder whether I might discuss a rather delicate and serious problem, namely the pluralism of Rai, about which I've recently written a letter to the president of this commission

Having thus derailed the committee's work, Giordano's colleague, Paolo Gentiloni Silveri (later to become Communications minister in the second Prodi government) asked a further question about the fairness of political news given regional elections in Molise, the smallest of the Italian regions with an ordinary statute. Neither Cappon nor Zaccaria was given an opportunity to respond to these questions, as, shortly following them, the sitting ran out of

⁴⁹ Commissione parlamentare per l'indirizzo generale e la vigilanza dei servizi radiotelevisivi, resoconto stenografico della seduta del 13 novembre 2001.

scheduled time, and was forced to reconvene at another date.

5.4 THE NORTH ATLANTIC COUNTRIES

Parliamentary supervision of the broadcaster in the Republic of Ireland and the United Kingdom is neither carried out by a dedicated committee (though there is, in the UK Parliament, a small specialist committee dedicated to coverage of Parliament, which is carried out exclusively by the BBC), but rather by whichever select committee happens to be shadowing the ministry which has formal responsibility for the broadcaster. Thus, parliamentary supervision of the BBC is currently carried out by the Commons Select Committee for Culture, Media and Sport, but was formerly carried out by the Select Committee for National Heritage between 1992 and 1997 and, before that date, by the Select Committee for Home Affairs. In the Republic of Ireland, RTÉ is currently overseen by the Joint Committee on Communications, Marine, and Natural Resources, but was previously overseen by the Joint Committee on Arts, Heritage and the Gaeltacht. There is, therefore, no guarantee that different select committees will necessarily be competent to discuss the work of the broadcaster, especially where there is interest is taken up by other, perhaps more consuming matters included in the committee's jurisdiction (such as Gaeltacht affairs for the Irish case).

Both committees work largely on the basis of precedent and custom rather than formal regulations. Indeed, it is difficult to date accurately the point at which the BBC became subject to parliamentary select committee oversight — whilst such oversight would have been inconceivable prior to the 1979 reform of the select committee system, the relevant select committee after that time — the Home Affairs select committee — had other matters to deal with, and indeed the first occasion the BBC presented its Annual Report to the Select Committee, in 1995, was actually initiated by the BBC itself.

The Irish and British committees are of roughly equivalent size. The Select Committee in the UK is composed of ten members; the Joint Committee in Ireland is composed of eleven members of the Dáil and four members of Seanad. Both are drawn in roughly proportional fashion

from the parties in the plenary, with, if anything, slight over-representation for minor parties which would not otherwise qualify for membership; both committees meet on an as-necessary basis.

In terms of the practice of the committees, the UK Select Committee's work is largely centred around the production of written reports with evidence from witnesses, whilst the Irish Joint Committee's work is more ad hoc (though the Select Committee, with Dáil members only, it does have a greater legislative role than its UK counterpart). The UK Select Committee typically produces seven or eight reports per parliamentary term; in recent years one of these has typically been a report on the BBC's own annual report.

In practice, the Select Committee calls witnesses from the BBC around twice a year. Typically one meeting is devoted to discussing the BBC's Annual Report, at which the Chairman of the Board of Governors (now the BBC Trust), the Director-General, Chief Financial Officer, and Public Affairs officer are typically present. Remaining meetings are occasional, and concern matters of passing interest: the BBC's commercial operations (HC24, session 2008/9), guidelines on public service content (HC36, session 2007/8), new media and the creative industries (HC509, session 2006/7), sports broadcasting rights, and so on. The Irish Joint committee's scrutiny of RTÉ is less all-encompassing: over the past two legislatures the committee has met with RTÉ representatives on four occasions — three times to discuss the company's annual report and operations, and once to discuss staffing issues.

Given the focus of both committees on post-hoc investigation of both broadcasters' annual reports, the type of questioning seen on the committee tends not to be related to day-to-day operations. There are, however, certain exceptions to this general trend: following scandals concerning telephone phone-in competitions and editing techniques used in a trailer for a BBC documentary about the Queen, the Select Committee convened two separate hearings on Call TV Quiz Shows (HC72, session 2006/7) and Public Confidence in Broadcasting. In the latter, however, both committee members and BBC executives asked questions about systems and structures, rather than concerning individuals:

Mr Hall: Caroline, following the Gilligan Report you said before the Hutton Inquiry, on the

truth and accuracy of those standards of the BBC, that the BBC fell well short of those. Do you think that is the same sort of restriction about what has happened with these particular incidents?

The most aggressive questioning came from Conservative MP Philip Davies:

Philip Davies: I will try one more time. What would it take to come out of that inquiry for you to decide that your position or Mark Thompson's position was no longer tenable?

This was not a clear invitation to resign — something which is, by contrast, far more common in the CPIV. It was, however, fairly persistent questioning designed to embarrass the BBC. It should, however, be put into context: this kind of questioning is not found in those hearings related to the BBC's Annual Report, which are the most common reason for committee hearings, and additionally the committee came after long-running concern about editorial standards in the wake of the Hutton inquiry — an issue on which the Select Committee did not hold a single hearing. It may therefore be that the Select Committee was displaying due diligence in bolting the stable door after the horse had bolted.

The points on which questioning tends to be most specific are, in fact, those which do not concern programme content, but rather those which concern the BBC's commercial impact. This pattern — which is also found in questioning in the plenary — may potentially be explained by the variety of organizations which are concerned about the BBC's impact on their own operations, and which lobby the Committee in this regard. The issue has already given rise to one Select Committee Report; the committee's report on public service content is also relevant in this regard.

5.5 THE SCANDINAVIAN COUNTRIES

In both Sweden and Denmark parliamentary supervision of the broadcaster is carried out by dedicated Culture committees, with the jurisdiction of these committees being less flexible than the jurisdictions of the ministries they may notionally supervise.

The Danish culture committee, the *kulturudvalg* typically meets every month during the parliamentary term, and has a remit including

“Cultural and artistic concerns, including libraries, museums, theatres, film, radio, broadcasting, conservation work, the cultural environment, free time activities, such as sport, as well as copyright”⁵⁰

The committee is (currently) composed of seventeen normal members, and seventeen replacement members, drawn on a proportional basis from the parties (though currently including one independent member).

The Swedish culture committee, the *kulturutskott* is almost identically in composition: it too is composed of seventeen ordinary members, with a larger number (28) of supplementary members; again, these members are drawn from the party groups in proportional fashion. The Swedish *kulturutskott* meets more frequently than its Danish equivalent, typically meeting twice every month.

By comparison with the preceding four committees, the Danish and Swedish committees’ work is more often taken up by reports on legislative initiatives rather than by hearings where broadcasting executives answer questions. Notwithstanding this, both broadcasters are subject to some parliamentary scrutiny by these committees: since the 2006 elections, the Swedish *kulturutskott* has met with representatives of SVT, SR, and UR (Utbildnings Radio) twice each, once in a joint session, and once in individual hearings. In the previous legislature, members heard from SR.

5.6 BUT WHAT ABOUT THE PLENARY?

The descriptions of the work of the several parliamentary committees considered above tends to suggest that the more specialised the parliamentary committee which supervises the broadcaster, and the more frequent its meetings, the more likely the parliamentary questioning found in that committee will be detailed and concerned with day-to-day matters, including the coverage of politically salient events,

⁵⁰ Folketing website, <http://www.ft.dk/default.asp?ptag=visUdvalg&tval={340D39EC-B3F8-468E-88B7-EC5FA14DF50D}>

instead of dealing with broader strategic questions. This is most obviously the case with the Italian and Spanish parliamentary committees. This finding therefore justifies the inclusion, in the index of legal protection used in 3, of parliamentary reporting requirements as an aspect of legal protection. Lower legal protection — here understood as more frequent parliamentary questioning — is in fact associated with patterns of questioning which are deleterious to independence.

Parliamentary questioning in committee, however, is but one aspect of parliamentary supervision. Concentrating on the number and specificity of questions asked in the committee might create a distorted picture of parliamentary questioning of the broadcaster if greater committee questioning is associated with reduced questioning in the plenary. That is to say, is it possible that questioning in the CPIV and the Comisión Mixta is greater because Rai and RTVE are not asked about in the plenary?

There are reasons for thinking that committee question and plenary questioning are both complements *and* substitutes. On the one hand, the basic “covering laws” of legislative studies — specialization and division of labour — suggest that committees will form in order to subtract work from the plenary, other things being equal. Since time in the plenary is limited, and since legislators have at least some collective interest in more efficient scrutiny, specialised committees are created in order that scrutiny may be carried out by individuals who are more aware of the issues, and who can devote it more time, confident in the knowledge that scrutiny of other areas will be carried out by their colleagues. Consequently, those issues which remain in the plenary are those which either cut across committee jurisdictions or which, by nature of their importance, cannot be confined to a small group of legislators alone. Where specialised committees exist — and in the case of the Spanish and Italian committees, these committees are specialised indeed — the demand for scrutiny of the broadcaster is likely to be met by the committee, leaving the plenary free to deal with other issues. With less specialised committees, there is a greater chance that some questions will be left uncovered by the committee, and arise in the plenary.

Conversely, the first wave of legislative studies tended to focus on the resources available to legislators as constraints on their legislative and oversight activity. Whilst large staff

numbers and office allowances are the most obvious and easily quantifiable resources available to legislators, specialised area knowledge also constitutes a resource upon which legislators may draw: experts may know which questions to ask in the plenary so as to obtain maximum benefit, or may know when some action worthy of ministerial response takes place. If specialised committees create a corps of specialised legislators with particular subject interests, committee questioning may lead to increased questioning in the plenary.

In order to test whether plenary and committee questioning are substitutes or complements, I first collected all relevant questions asked in the plenary for five of the countries in the sample (Denmark was not included) from each parliament's website. Questions were judged to be relevant if they mentioned the broadcaster in the body of the question, if they referenced "public service", or if they made reference to the television licence fee (only applicable in Italy, Ireland, and the United Kingdom). I subsequently compiled a list of the members of the relevant parliamentary committees, excluding supplementary members for those countries which use them, and calculate the mean number of parliamentary questions per member per parliamentary term, for committee members and non-committee members alike. A parliamentarian was judged to be a committee member for the whole parliamentary term even if she or he served in the committee only for a part of the legislative term.

If the complement hypothesis holds — that is, if the existence of a specialised committee breeds parliamentarians with greater interest and inclination to ask questions in the plenary — then the mean number of relevant questions asked should be higher for committee members than for all other parliamentarians. Additionally, we might expect the gap between committee members and other parliamentarians to be higher for those committees which meet more often and which concentrate exclusively on the broadcaster.

It should be noted that differences in the number of questions asked is not conclusive evidence that the kind of parliamentary committees "cause" a larger number of questions. Members of any committee might be more diligent and more likely to ask questions than parliamentarians who have not been asked to serve in a committee, or who cannot serve on a committee because they are in the cabinet.

Table 5.2: Questions per parliamentarian per term

	Italy	Spain	UK	Ireland	Sweden
Committee-members	1.5	0.448	1.8	2.92	0.088
Non members	0.382	0.195	0.371	1.38	0.094

Table 5.2 shows that the average number of questions asked per parliamentarian per term is higher for committee members in four of the five countries studied. The exception, in line with expectations, is Sweden. Contrary to expectations, it does not seem that committee members in Spain or Italy are much more likely to ask questions than committee members in the UK or Ireland. At the same time, the number of committee members in Spain and Italy is larger, and thus the total impact of the committee on plenary questioning is greater.

5.7 CONCLUSIONS

The evidence given in this chapter concerning *funding* suggests that

- whilst increased commercial funding of public service broadcasters *is* associated with greater volatility in the level of the licence fee,
- there is limited evidence to suggest that governments exploit that volatility in order to put pressure on the broadcaster.

As far as parliamentary questioning is concerned,

- parliamentary committees which are dedicated to supervising the broadcaster ask more questions; those questions that they ask are more detailed; and the detail is of such a nature as to represent interference in the work of the broadcaster;
- dedicating a parliamentary committee to the broadcaster does not mean that fewer questions are asked about the broadcaster in the plenary; rather, the reverse is true.

Part III

HISTORY

In the previous five chapters, I have set out a theory to explain why some public service broadcasters should be more independent from politics than others, and I have demonstrated this theory by a comparative statistical analysis of thirty-six broadcasters the world over, at varying time periods. Subsequently, I have looked at three particular elements – appointments to the board, funding, and parliamentary questioning – in synchronic fashion, for a subset of six particularly important broadcasters – Rai, RTVE, the BBC, RTÉ, SR/SVT, and DR.

In the next six chapters, I switch from discussing these broadcaster synchronically to discussing them diachronically. That is to say, the next six chapters offer potted histories of each broadcaster with special emphasis on their independence from politics over time. None of these histories is intended to be comprehensive or necessarily representative of the broadcaster's entire history. Rather, the histories are written to emphasise the substantial similarities in the development of each broadcaster.

Three chapters – the chapters on Rai, the BBC, and SR/SVT – are substantially longer. I have chosen these broadcasters as particularly representative of the Mediterranean, North Atlantic, and Central European models identified by Hallin and Mancini. Each of these chapters follows a similar pattern, with three or four sections discussing, respectively

- the first years of the broadcaster, from its formation, typically in the middle of the nineteen twenties, to the middle of the nineteen-fifties. These years are important because they set the broadcaster on its future path, and because they are years in which the adoption of certain conventions has disproportionate impact.
- the middle years of the broadcaster, from the fifties until the middle of the seventies. These years are typically marked, on the one hand, by an initial confrontation between the broadcaster and the government of the day, which is won by the broadcaster, and which results in greater independence of the latter; and, on the other hand, by a subsequent confrontation between broadcaster and the government which is generated by new and radical ideas about the way in which news should be presented, not only as a passive reflection of the most important events of the day, but

as an active effort to understand the structural aspects of political life, often associated with a demand for greater pluralism. This latter struggle is 'won', in most cases, by the government, and is followed by a restructuring of the broadcaster's efforts. (The reverse is true for Italy).

- the latter life of the broadcaster from the late seventies onwards, discussing the broadcaster's continuing relationship with government and with politics. It is hard to discern general patterns which govern the histories of each broadcaster during this long period. In Sweden, this period has been relatively uneventful. In Britain, this period has been extremely eventful, with considerable clashes between the BBC and, respectively, the Thatcher and Blair governments. In Italy, this period has established no pattern, for as soon as the reforms of the nineteen-seventies were assimilated by the broadcaster, the political system collapsed, with unpredictable repercussions for the broadcaster.

Each of these principal chapters is followed by a much shorter discussion of the comparable broadcaster – Denmark's Radio, RTÉ, and RTVE. These chapters in large part follow the same periodicization – there is, for example, considerable synchronicity in the Danish and Swedish debates respectively about *vänstervridning* (the turn to the left) amongst the journalistic corps.

All six chapters are based on the leading histories of each broadcaster; the three principal chapters are supplemented with original archive research further demonstrating my argument. They are followed by a conclusion which re-assumes the principal conclusions of each chapter, once again in synchronic fashion.

THE ABSENCE OF CAESARS: RAI

“Never say objectivity doesn’t exist. It’s the alibi of those about to bullshit you”

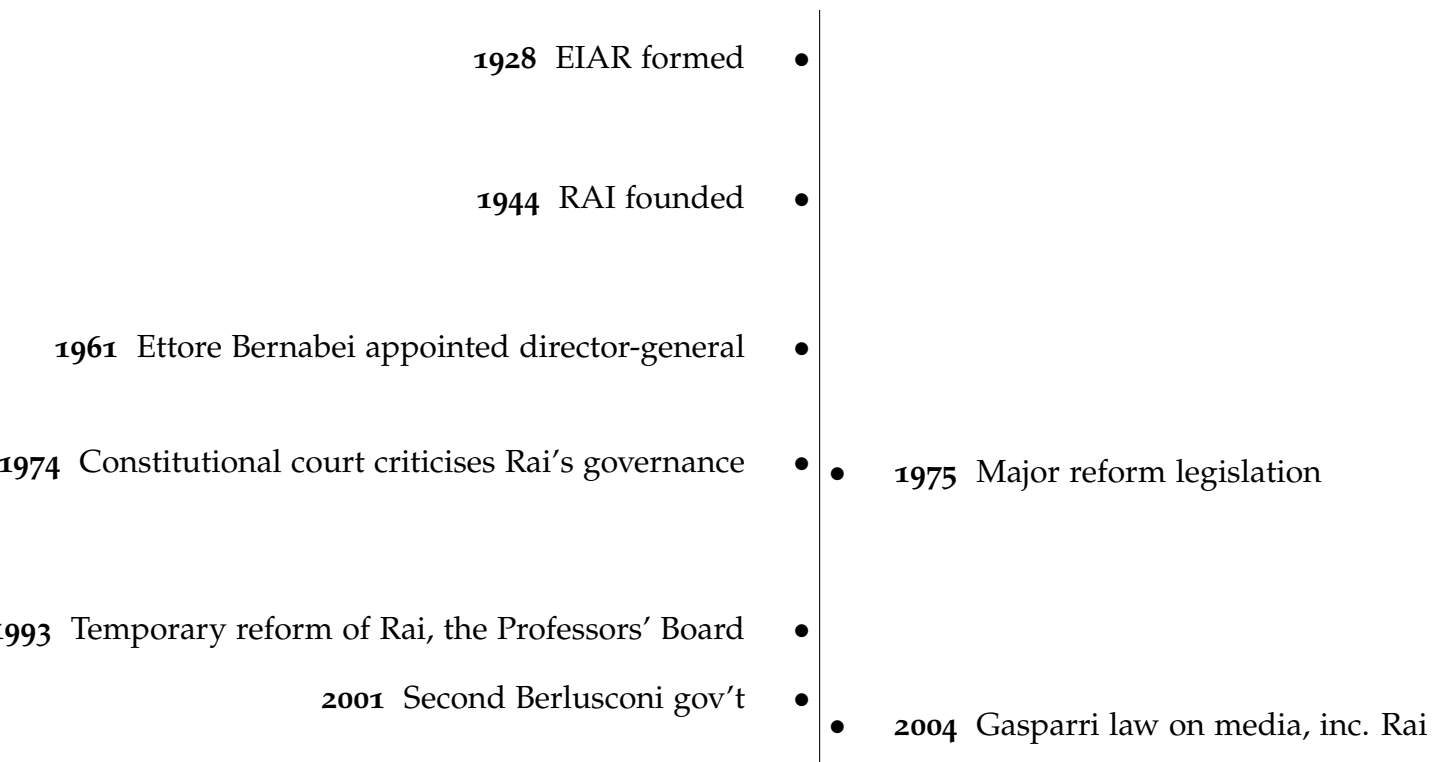
- [Ottone \(1996\)](#)

Less partisan Rai boards have often been dominated by intellectuals. One consequence is that these individuals occasionally offer useful, unguarded, insights into the functioning of their broadcasters. Medieval historian Franco Cardini (board member, 1994—1996) thought Roman history could provide an appropriate remedy for Rai’s problems of excessive turnover and dispersion of power:

“What Rai needs is a relatively long period of real government. . . A period of dictatorship followed by an extremely tough mayor, as ancient Rome and the medieval cities did. A period in which one could truly reform, in the etymological sense of the word: *re-form*” ([Cardini and Riccio, 1995](#), pp. 50, 91).

Yet dispersion of power and limited term-length have not always been problems of Rai. For the first thirty years of its existence (1944 — 1974), Rai was a relatively centralised organization with power concentrated around the managing director (*amministratore delegato*, AD) or the director-general. These figures were able to impose codes governing content, or to exhort journalists to greater professionalism. Executives like Filiberto Guala (AD, 1954 — 56) and Ettore Bernabei (DG, 1961 — 74) did not always do so in order to increase the broadcaster’s independence, but at least in the latter case a modicum of independence was obtained, even at the cost of numerous compromises with the dominant Christian Democratic party.

Figure 6.1: Rai timeline



It is unclear whether Guala or Bernabei's successors could have used the machinery they developed, and the centralization they achieved, for less partisan ends. They did not have the chance: after Bernabei's departure in 1974, a major reform of Rai divided the broadcaster into multiple competing entities, and inaugurated the instability and dispersion of power accentuated by the 'temporary' reform legislation of 1993 and lamented by Cardini. This dispersion of power, and in particular the limited term in office of both the board and the director-general (two key components of the index of legal protection discussed in chapter 3), might not matter for the independence of the broadcaster if journalists were bound by a strong commitment to professional norms, or if Rai had been able to build on non-partisan agency copy; but neither of these conditions holds. The dominant value in the media, that of pluralism, has an essentially political genesis, and imposes no restrictions on content; attempts to introduce other regulatory values such as objectivity or impartiality, or to introduce written codes of conduct, have been unsuccessful since boards and directors-general have not been able to push reforms through in the limited time available to them. Rai is thus an excellent demonstration

of my thesis that an independent broadcaster must have a modicum of legal protection and the basis for professional codes capable of governing broadcast output.

I consider four periods in Rai's development: the period from the first radio broadcasts in Italy in the nineteen-twenties to the appointment of Ettore Bernabei as director-general in 1961, including the transformation of the fascist radio company EIAR (*Ente Italiano Audizione Radiofoniche*) into Rai (6.1); the period from Bernabei's appointment until the reform of 1975 (6.2); the period from that reform until the collapse of the established party system in 1993/4 (6.3); and from 1993 until the present day, including the 'temporary' reform of 1993 and the current Gasparri law of 2004 (6.4). Within each section I briefly consider the history of the period, including developments in the media market (*.1), before moving on to discuss the key rhetorical commitments of Rai (*.2), its concrete rules as they developed (*.3), the structure, organization and recruitment of news staff (*.4), and alleged cases of interference during that period (*.5).

6.1 FASCISM AND THE POST-WAR PERIOD (1924 — 1960)

6.1.1 *The setting*

The Italian media market before radio offered little promise for independent broadcasting. There were few potential consumers of printed news: almost three-quarters of the Italian population was illiterate in 1861, and universal (> 95%) literacy did not arrive until the nineteen-fifties (Castronovo *et al.*, 1979, p. 10; Banks and International, 2007). As a result, sales were small: the *Corriere della Sera* was by far Italy's largest newspaper at the start of the First World War, with daily sales of over 200,000 copies — but this was only a fifth of the circulation of the London-based *Daily Mail*, which had a number of similarly-situated competitors (Griffiths, 2006, p. 133). For most Italian newspapers, costs could not be covered by sales and advertising revenue alone (Mazzanti, 1991, p. 49). Consequently, non-profit oriented actors — the political parties, industrialists, the Catholic Church — stepped in and operated their own newspapers as means of pursuing influence rather than making profit.

Given proprietors' wishes, "political and ideological militancy became... a winning card as far as entering the profession was concerned" (Becchelloni, 1991, p. 14).

Journalists and editors in the larger newspapers of the North might have attempted to gain autonomy by professionalization — and indeed attempts in this vein were made by Luigi Albertini, editor of the *Corriere* (Asor Rosa, 1981, p. 1245) — but professionalization was halted by the Fascist regime. This was for two reasons: first, any pretence at objectivity was not credible in a regime of censorship; and second, the Fascists, in their bid to control entry to their journalistic profession, created an Order of Journalists, membership in which was compulsory for all practising journalists, which is still the case today (Barile, 1989). In many other countries, journalists have professionalized as part of a project in order to secure a state-granted monopoly on the exercise of their profession, allowing the profession to pursue social closure and extract monopoly rents: in Italy, journalists achieved this by accident. There was consequently less incentive to pursue a professionalization project.

Nor was the market large enough to sustain a dedicated press agency without government subvention. During the Fascist period the sole press agency was the *Agenzia Stefani*, a quasi-official body which relayed releases from the government press office: the first radio broadcaster, the *Unione Radiofonica Italiana* (URI), was obliged to take all its news from this source (Cannistraro, 1975, p. 229). After the Second World War, and on the suggestion of the Allies, a co-operative press agency, the *Agenzia Nazionale Stampa Associata* (Ansa) was set up with participation of all major newspapers; but from 1949 onwards Ansa was subsidised by the Prime Minister's Office and subsequently by the Foreign Office, ostensibly in order to relay Italian news around the world, but in practice privileging government voices in all agency copy (Murialdi, 1980, p. 237).

As in other European countries, radio broadcasting was initially carried out by private operators granted an exclusive state concession. The URI was granted an exclusive licence to broadcast in December 1924, but in 1928 URI was replaced by a new body, the *Ente Italiano Audizione Radiofoniche* (EIAR), which became state property by 1933, and which was funded by licence fee (Zeno-Zencovich, 1983). *Agenzia Stefani's* stale news releases became increasingly propagandistic during the course of the thirties, and the

amount of propaganda broadcast by EIAR grew (Cannistraro, 1975, p. 255).

Following the Allied liberation of Italy, Rai was founded on the 26th October 1944. The new organization inherited Eiar's concession and structures, apart from in the North where the radio services run by the CLNAI (*Comitato di Liberazione Nazionale per l'Alta Italia*) continued until December 1945. Commenting on the decree establishing Rai, Chiarenza (2002, p. 33) notes that

“all political forces, with no exceptions, could find nothing better to do than dust off the legal schema used for the EIAR, limiting themselves to substituting Fascist political control with control by the new executive”.

The company was run by a director-general and managing director, both of which were appointed by the major shareholder, the *Istituto per la Ricostruzione Industriale* (IRI), and thus by the government of the day.

6.1.2 Key rhetorical commitments

In its early years Rai was in theory committed to impartiality and objectivity. These terms were used in 1947 legislation establishing a parliamentary committee to supervise the broadcaster,⁵¹ and again towards the end of this period when the Constitutional Court heard its first challenge to the constitutionality of Rai's television and radio monopoly.⁵²

These commitments were initially reiterated by Rai management: the board declared October 1945 that Rai's news bulletins

“must be absolutely impartial, and must not have a preference for any of the parties. . . those responsible within the company should take care that the radio news bulletins always meet these demands, and that they are never partial, either through omission or through the order in which news is given. As with all ideals, it

⁵¹ D.Lgs.C.P.S. 3 aprile 1947, n. 428

⁵² Sentenza no. 59 del 1960.

is possible that this ideal will not be met, just as it is human for not everyone to be satisfied with our bulletins' performance in this respect" (Chiarenza, 2002, p. 30).

Objectivity and impartiality — or the lack thereof — were also terms used when Rai was criticised. Shortly after the board issued the statement above, Mario Scelba, Minister of Posts and Telecommunications, and thus the minister within the government who was, in some sense, 'responsible' for Rai, sent a telegram to Rai's president, criticising Rai's news service as "manifestly partial" . In another attempt by the Christian Democratic party (*Democrazia Cristiana*, DC) to intimidate Rai into changing its coverage, the party's newspaper, *Il Popolo*, "deplored the absence of objectivity within Rai" (quoted in Veltroni, 1990, p. 86).

These terms, however, fell into disuse as the DC's control over Rai grew, particularly after the election of 1948. By 1956, Piccone Stella, head of Rai's news division, felt able to tell the parliamentary committee charged with monitoring Rai's objectivity that the concept was "in an absolute sense, both a noble aspiration and a naive abstraction" — and thus, by implication, not something to worry too greatly about (Chiarenza, 2002, p. 83).

6.1.3 Concrete rules

Rai could not do as Radiotjänst did and adopt codes first developed by professional associations: the Order of Journalists was in limbo following the war, and had narrowly avoided being shut down by Allied forces (Murialdi, 1980, p. 183). There was strong opposition to the idea that the Order could or should develop such codes: Luigi Einaudi, first president of Republican Italy, argued that

"The Order becomes a ridiculous piece of nonsense from the moment one supposes that it can give a judgement on technical approaches, professional ability, or the duration of traineeships offered. . . There is no Order for poets and there cannot be an Order for journalists" (quoted in Farinelli *et al.*, 1997, p. 323)

Nor could Rai rely on press agency copy to shape its output, as the BBC did. The company was not part of the co-

operative that ran Ansa, and did not take copy from the agency. Instead, it initially (1944) sought to restrict its news announcements to official press releases put out by the authorities. The decision led to the resignation of the first editor of the radio news, Corrado Alvaro (Monteleone, 1999, p. 199).

Some written codes did exist, but these did not attempt to translate the requirements of impartiality and objectivity into concrete guidelines for content. Rather, they were primarily stylistic or moralistic in character:

“At that time in Rai there was lying around, not just in the news-desks but also in the other rooms where non-journalistic programmes were prepared, a booklet, a manual for writing for radio edited by no less than [novelist] Carlo Emilio Gadda... Gadda’s manual was certainly well done, but the simple rules, the dry pronouncements of Piccone Stella were the indispensable instrument for regulating any prose destined to fly through the ether” (Mazza and Agnes, 2004, p. 34)

In addition to Gadda’s style manual, there was also a “self-regulatory code”, often spoken of as secret, but which was in fact mentioned in board minutes of 1953 (and reprinted in). The code, however, was used to justify interventions by management who “intervened only, but extremely firmly, to safeguard aspects concerning morality and good manners, which were to be identical with those models which the Catholic world claimed to be those of the entire country” (Chiarenza, 2002, p. 60).

There was, therefore, no code which would constrain journalists’ output, as viewed in political space; no rules enjoining them to greater impartiality or objectivity, and thus no commandments which could be cited by the broadcaster to those who accused it of being biased. Those codes which did exist were designed for an implicit partisan purpose. Yet one might still wonder whether these codes might not have served a purpose in regulating Rai’s contact with politicians, and whether the structures designed to enforce them might not have served some other purpose had they been radically rewritten. Certainly, Biagio Agnes — then a journalist, and later (1982 — 1990) director-general of Rai — thought they were useful to the company:

“One might say this was an excess of prudery. No, rather it was a minimal example of codes, of rules that those who worked in Rai had to keep in mind, and which were formulated supposing the existence of other, unwritten codes, other rules of mutual respect which, for their part, the politicians should have stuck to” (Mazza and Agnes, 2004, p. 32)

6.1.4 *Structure, organization, recruitment in news*

These codes, developed in 1953, found organizational expression in a complex system of oversight committees developed by Filiberto Guala. Guala was a fervent Catholic who, on his first visit to Rai staff in Turin, boasted that he had come to “hunt down pederasts and Communists” (Cesareo, 1970, p. 35). These committees cut out the old *aziendalisti* — those employees who had been with the company in its previous incarnation as EIAR — and involved all the main players in news; these committees supplemented the normal control of news, which was unified in one division, reporting to the director general.

Monitoring journalists, however, was less essential as the DC gradually tightened its grip on the personnel decisions of the broadcaster. As the company expanded (with the first television broadcasts beginning in 1954), a steady stream of journalists came from the Christian Democratic daily *Il Popolo*: Rodolfo Arato, director-general from 1956 onwards; his successor, Ettore Bernabei; and Vittorio Chesi, director of GR1 from 1965.

Recruitment from Christian Democratic publications can be considered a ‘normal’ method of recruitment resulting from a structural feature of the market for news - viz., the presence of numerous party organs. Recruitment through other methods consciously designed to place partisan sympathisers within the broadcaster was also practised. Often this took the form of bi-directional movement between the press offices of ministers or parties, and Rai. The leadership of Rai set an example: after Giuseppe Spataro, a DC deputy and subsequently communications minister, the next president of Rai, Cristiano Ridomi, was recruited from the prime minister’s press office. Such practices were, however, commonplace throughout the broadcaster. As Chiarenza (2002,

p. 112) describes it, “hirings were almost always determined by political and clientelistic pressure, independent of any clear objective. . . in most cases the journalists came from the secretariat of the parties or their press offices; rarely from journalistic experience in the daily newspapers”. This placement could be honed thanks to the practice of seconding journalists to political posts: according to [Cesareo \(1970, p. 96\)](#), “the practice entered into use at the time of the Tambroni government, in 1960, when the head of domestic services for the television news was ‘seconded’ to the prime minister’s office, and assumed the functions of Tambroni’s personal private secretary. From then, it has grown such that the press offices of the Prime Minister, of the Interior Ministry, of the Ministry for State Participation, of the parties participating in Rai’s management. . . regularly borrow. . . journalists employed by the Corporation”. In addition to representing a source of free labour, these practices allowed the parties (1) to assess the reliability of certain journalists in general, (2) to create on the part of these journalists a sense of gratitude, and (3) to generate a roster of potential acceptable nominees for future posts.

Although much could be achieved by hiring in a period of natural growth, the DC was not afraid to remove journalists it thought were not sufficiently reliable. The editor of the television news bulletin, Massimo Rendina, was removed from the broadcaster, allegedly upon the direct request of then-prime minister Antonio Segni, for being insufficiently anti-Communist, despite his Catholic newspaper background ([Chiarenza, 2002, p. 85](#)). This tactic, however, could only be used rarely, as it tended to produce discontent amongst the smaller parties in the DC-led coalition governments of the period.

6.1.5 *Political interference*

As should be obvious by this point, Rai during its first fifteen years was effectively controlled by the Christian Democratic party, especially in its news output. The DC’s degree of control was openly admitted in a parliamentary debate towards the end of the fifties, when the Minister responsible for Rai, Spallino responded, in answer to a question on control of Rai,

“Naturally it is the board of Rai which decides [loud shouts from the left]. Well, if you’re not too upset by it, the DC decides. Or does this also upset you? Do you dislike it that the Italian people should have given a majority to the DC? The Italian people decides when it sends to the Parliament men who are inspired by the principles of Christian Democracy (applause from the centre). This is the reality of things, even if you dislike it” (quoted in [Veltroni, 1990](#), p. 99)

This control had concrete effects on the broadcaster’s output. Content analysis demonstrated the DC’s disproportionate share of news items and reportage:

“From an analysis of the political speeches given on Sundays in the last three months of 1950 and transmitted on radio, Christian Democratic speakers were given 105 separate news items for a total of 1,099 lines, whilst the communists were given 13 news items, and the Republicans just five” ([Monteleone, 1999](#), p. 238)

Rai employees tacitly admitted to acting in the DC’s interests. Following a 1949 letter from then junior minister Giulio Andreotti, inviting the broadcaster to exercise the most ‘prudent’ discretion in matters of domestic or international controversy, the broadcaster replied that:

“as far as the invitation to abstain from broadcasting news items which could give rise to worrying repercussions of a political nature, we make so bold as to note that, both in internal as well as in international political news, as in economic and trade union news, Rai — conscious of the responsibility it holds — already exercises severe self-censorship [*una severa opera di autodisciplina*]” ([Monteleone, 1999](#), p. 238)

Nonetheless, in terms of organization, Rai’s structure was functionally sound, and the same structures which permitted easy censorship also permitted the broadcaster to supply a coherent product. The formal rules employed by the broadcaster may have been inspired by Catholicism, but were no more prudish and no more ridiculous to modern eyes than the rules employed by other broadcasters at this time, born of the need to demonstrate ‘a safe pair of

hands' to their respective governments. It was only through the permanence of the DC in power that such rules became identified with propagandistic use of the public broadcaster.

6.2 THE BERNABEI ERA (1961 — 1974)

6.2.1 *The setting*

The sixties brought greater openness to Italy. In religion, the Second Vatican Council (1962 — 65) liberalised the Church's position on numerous issues. In politics, the failure of the Tambroni government meant the beginning of an opening to the left under Amintore Fanfani, and coalition governments including the Italian Socialist Party (*Partito Socialista Italiano*, PSI) as an external component. This opening to the left was mirrored in Rai by the appointment, in 1961, of Ettore Bernabei as director-general. Bernabei, like Arata before him, had been editor of *Il Popolo*, and was an acolyte of Fanfani. Under his leadership, Rai gained greater independence from the Christian Democrats, and greater independence from politics in general — but only because at the same time it became dependent on a wider range of parties, who would push for ever greater recognition and ever larger shares of appointments, until the reform of 1975, which followed Bernabei's reign, formalised this nascent spoils system.

6.2.2 *Key rhetorical commitments*

Though Bernabei had a similar background to previous directors-general, and thus might have been expected to continue subordinating the needs of the audience to the diktat of party, Bernabei understood the need to produce entertaining and uplifting television content. One of Bernabei's contemporaries, Enzo Biagi has argued that the television produced by Bernabei "was some of the best television produced in the world, easily withstanding the comparison with the most celebrated broadcasters such as the BBC" (Mazza and Agnes, 2004, p. 8). If entertaining television was sought, greater *professionalism* was needed. This was the key value of the Bernabei period, but it was not a value

which was found in written documents, but rather based on Bernabei's own recruitment and commissioning decisions.

This was particularly the case in news. Prior to Bernabei the model for the television news had been the cinema news-reels of the thirties and forties, featuring video footage of events whilst an off-screen voice commented. Additionally, the dominance of the DC within the broadcaster meant that many of the events shown were trivial — footage of ministers at opening ceremonies or giving speeches — whilst non-trivial events featuring the Communist party were ignored.

Bernabei disagreed with this kind of news not because he objected, ideologically, to the over-representation of Christian Democrats and the exclusion of Communists, but rather because he was convinced, politically, that this model lacked credibility (Pinto, 1980, p. 29). Thus, in order to present a credible message which benefited the party, it was paradoxically necessary to gain some autonomy from it — and possibly independence at some later stage. Yet “it was not possible to realise any autonomy for Rai without the company forming, from the inside, certain strongly professionalised social profiles who, precisely in virtue of the quality of their work, and in contrast to those following traditional roles, obtained a strong degree of self-regulation strictly connected to the director-general's project” (Pinto, 1980, p. 30)

6.2.3 *Concrete rules*

This demand for professionalism did not translate into written rules governing output: the process of creating the television news bulletin was entirely conventional by the standards of many European broadcasters, with morning meetings, items contributed, followed by subsequent editorial meetings to decide on running orders. The only control exercised over content was the control exercised by the editor and deputy editor, who decided whether a piece was worthy of broadcast or not. Yet control was entrusted to these individuals because they all enjoyed strong fiduciary relationships with Bernabei and the management of the broadcaster. The strength of this fiduciary relationship was often based on the fact that Bernabei had taken strong interest in recruitment matters and had often had to pay a high

price (recruiting other not so talented but well-connected journalists in order to balance out “non-political” hires) in order to hire these individuals. As Pinto (1980, p. 89) writes,

“[The management] based their action on the recognition of the *professionalism of the individual journalist*, seen as political professionalism in the key posts of the company, and as technical capacity in the technical and production positions, but, at the same time, they employed this *fatally individual* professionalism to reconfirm and render structurally insuperable their own hegemony”

An ‘individual’ professionalism was acceptable to most socially aspirational journalists, since it echoed well-worn tropes about the journalist’s job being intellectual — and hence highly individual — work.

At the same time, however, the absence of any codified or structural professionalism had negative consequences for the broadcaster. First, it could not outlast the departure of the particular individuals who had contributed to the company’s professionalism. Second, it could not outlast the director-general who was responsible for this professionalization, and who was the fulcrum of the fiduciary relationships which underpinned it. Third, the absence of formal components meant that the contradiction between a commitment to professionalism on the one hand, and the latent desire to demonstrate that the Christian Democratic party was at the centre of the political life of the country, was left unexamined.

6.2.4 *Structure, organization, recruitment in news*

Despite this, Bernabei’s professionalization project did succeed in gaining the broadcaster greater autonomy. This is clearest in news, where, given Bernabei’s dim assessment of the then-existing model, “the company therefore faced the problem of a comprehensive re-qualification of the entire news and current affairs sector. . . In 1962 the task of building a modern *telegiornale*, with the newspapers of the North as a point of reference, was entrusted to Enzo Biagi.

The choice, both of the journalist in question, and of the reference point, was not coincidental” (Pinto, 1980, p. 29).

Whilst Biagi’s reputation would grow further, it was nonetheless at that time still sufficient to allow him to put a series of conditions to Bernabei, including the ability to rebuff political pressure as far as content was concerned. And thus, for a time the telegiornali became less staid. It is perhaps an oblique compliment that even Marxist commentators like Giovanni Cesareo felt obliged to damn Biagi with faint praise, for favouring the interests of the dominant class out of false consciousness rather than conscious intent, pursuing “the classic line of journalism which is falsely ‘independent’” (Cesareo, 1970, p. 44).

Equally, the choice of a Northern reference point was important because the market for news had always been larger in the North than in the South. Even in the brief period where the two Rai networks had been split between those in the South and the partisan-controlled networks in the North, the Northern radio news had been fresher, unburdened by the legacy of EIAR and with access to foreign press agencies who chose bases in Milan (Monteleone, 1999, p. 200).

The ‘Biagi experiment’ was successful, in that “for a time — and to the great relief of millions of Italians — the continual appearances of ministers, deputies and senators of the majority, forever intent of cutting ribbons, laying cornerstones, and opening conventions, became less” (Chiarenza, 2002, p. 103). Not only was the content of better quality, it also served as a rallying point for the defence of the broadcaster: when Justice minister Guido Gonella (ironically the first President of the Order of Journalists when it was re-founded in 1963) attacked Biagi’s management of the television news,

“All of Rai’s journalists joined with Bernabei against Gonella, releasing a communique where they affirmed that their jobs needed to be carried out in ‘full independence’, and the obligation to provide objective news could not be passed over for ‘elements of political and moral corruption’. Rai’s board was to protect ‘their right to defend themselves against any attack and speculation concerning their professional dignity’”(Pinto, 1980, p. 34).

Unfortunately, whilst Biagi's presence and the new impetus he gave to television news could win a modicum of independence for the broadcaster, and offered the potential for resistance to political interference, Biagi was still working under considerable constraints — particularly as far as staffing was concerned. One of the means by which Bernabei had secured the possibility of hiring talented journalists and producers who were not connected to the Christian Democratic party (like Biagi) was his promise to simultaneously hire other journalists and managers who were not necessarily talented, but who enjoyed good political connections. Over time, this practice was extended to include those close to the PSI and the Social Democrats (the Liberals and the Republicans, had already procured a limited number of posts within the company).

Because of the importance of this hiring strategy to the political standing of the company, not even Bernabei could permit Biagi to hire as he wished: "Amongst the guarantees which Biagi had not obtained (and perhaps had not even thought to ask) was the possibility of choosing capable journalists... and not necessarily drawn from the press offices and the youth secretariats of the political parties". Consequently, the Biagi experiment ended quickly, as Biagi "soon realised the impossibility of setting a new course with such human resources... and, at the first occasion, resigned" (Chiarenza, 2002, p. 103).

This was the paradox of Bernabei's system, which Biagi so quickly grasped: employees were encouraged to do a better job, as evaluated by considerations internal to the craft conditional on their acceptance that staffing decisions are subject to considerations which are instead external and political-clientelistic in nature. The latter was the price to pay for greater autonomy in certain areas; the former was the method for achieving it.

6.2.5 *Political interference*

During Bernabei's period in office the nature of political interference in Rai changed. Before Bernabei it was difficult to speak of interference per se: the broadcaster's low levels of political independence were due to the fact that most journalists were biddable or otherwise convinced to work

as agents of the dominant Christian Democrats; interference was consequently not necessary to secure coverage favourable to the party.

Under Bernabei, however, journalists were no longer unambiguously agents for the DC: some claimed to have no political agenda, whilst others, working in the same unified news apparatus, had been recruited on the basis of their (differing) partisan sympathies. Consequently, the overall direction of output was less clearly towards the DC. Cases of intervention were increasingly cases in which politicians thought that journalists had overstepped the line. Rai, however, proved increasingly unable to respond to such interventions, and attempts to provide guarantees — whether to the politicians or to the journalists — were fruitless. Aldo Sandulli, a former president of the Constitutional Court, was appointed president of Rai in 1969 in order to act as a ‘guarantor’: but he was unable to prevent a fight developing between the board vice-president Italo de Feo and journalist Sergio Zavoli, who had drawn criticism for a current affairs program on the Italian penal code. Sandulli resigned that same year.

6.3 REFORM TO REFORM (1975 — 1992)

6.3.1 *The setting*

The reform law of 1975 was overdue. Legislation to replace the 1947 governmental decree which remained the legislative basis for Rai’s continued operation — had been promised since 1969 ([Chiarenza, 2002](#), p. 148), and the charter between Rai and the state had been renewed annually in the expectation that new legislation would shortly fill the vacuum. Despite numerous exploratory talks, debate deadlocked around five key issues — the relationship between supervisory and management roles (in large part inspired by Bernabei’s management of the broadcaster); the relationship between the executive and the broadcaster; guarantees of objectivity; the legal structure of the broadcaster; and, finally, programming issues.

The Constitutional Court forced the Parliament’s hand, and in part made its task easier, with an extremely bold rul-

ing in summer 1974.⁵³ The Court had been asked to rule on whether Rai’s monopoly over national television broadcasting was incompatible with constitutional provisions on freedom of enterprise (Arts. 41, 43) and freedom of expression (Art. 21). As in its previous judgements,⁵⁴ the Court held that bandwidth limitations meant that untrammelled private enterprise in broadcasting would quickly lead to natural monopoly and a consequent risk that citizen’s right to receive information of various kinds — also inferred from Art. 21 — would be impaired. The Court once again affirmed that “the State monopolist is institutionally situated so as to enjoy the most favourable conditions of objectivity and impartiality necessary to surmount the difficulties imposed by the natural limitations of the medium” (§2(d)), and yet at the same time, laid out a series of conditions which the State had to meet in order that its conduct be constitutional.

The Court insisted in its judgement that it was passing no judgement on how Rai had *in fact* been managed up until that point, and that the conditions it laid out were made “with respect for the discretionality the legislator enjoys in choosing the most appropriate instruments to ensure the pursuit of the two fundamental objectives [discussed in the ruling]” (§8) — but by the standards of the court, its ruling represented an astonishing incursion into the legislator’s domain in a field where its jurisprudence has rarely been of the highest calibre (Volcansek, 2000).

Of these seven conditions the Court laid out, four in particular are important for our purposes:

- that programmes be influenced by “impartial criteria” respecting “the fundamental values of the constitution, and the richness and multiplicity of strands of thought” (§8b)
- that journalists be held to a “greater objectivity” and be in position “to carry out their duties within the framework of professional codes” (§8b)
- that “the executive organs of the body managing [the concession] (whether this be a public body or a private concessionary owned by the public purse) not be constituted in such a fashion as to represent, directly

53 Sentenza no. 225/74; all subsequent section references are to the part of the judgement *Considerato in diritto*.

54 In particular, decision no. 59 of 1960.

or indirectly, the preponderant or exclusive expression of the executive power, and that their structure be so as to guarantee their objectivity” (§8a)

- that, “for the implementation of the above-mentioned directives and issues of control relating to the same, adequate powers should be given to the Parliament, which institutionally represents the entire national collective” (§8c).

The judgement makes almost no explicit reference — and few implicit references — to the value of pluralism, which, as we shall see, was judged to be the motive principle behind the '75 reform. Rather, the values more often evoked by the court are traditional ‘liberal’ values of objectivity and impartiality. As far as organization is concerned, although the Court is concerned about the influence of the executive, it is remarkably sanguine about the potential impact of parliamentary control over the broadcaster.

Although Rai was immediately effected by the Court’s criticism of its governance, over the long term it was affected more by the court’s decision, in that same judgement, to permit local cable television. Whilst a national private television network would represent a threat to the free formation of public opinion, the Court held that private enterprise at the local level would not be damaging in the same way. The decision permitted a number of private enterprises to experiment in the new market for local television via cable and local terrestrial. Because of the considerable capital expenditure involved in supplying content capable of competing with Rai, local networks quickly coalesced to form *de facto* regional or national networks. One such national network was run by Silvio Berlusconi’s company Mediaset, which bought out its two principal competitors, the publishing houses Rusconi and Mondadori, in 1982 and 1984 respectively, leaving Berlusconi with a monopoly of private television. Berlusconi’s friendship with Socialist party leader Bettino Craxi (prime minister 1983–1987) effectively obstructed legislation regulating commercial television. Berlusconi’s channels consequently operated in a normative vacuum, and were not subject to many of the public service obligations placed on other European commercial television stations. In particular, not only was there no obligation to broadcast news and current affairs programming, there was a ban on its broadcast, and the Mediaset channels only started experimenting with news

in 1991, barely three years before Berlusconi's entry into politics. Had commercial news flourished, it might either have shown up Rai's own news coverage, or, had it been similar, demonstrated that Rai's criteria of news selection were criteria which would be followed by most operators. Instead, Italy's major commercial channels produced news which disproportionately featured Berlusconi's own party and members of his governing coalition.

Were the influence of commercial television on Rai limited to news, it would scarcely merit mention; at the same time, however, the growth of unregulated commercial television meant that Rai's public service ambitions of pedagogy, moral uplift, and national unification had to be put on hold in order to secure ratings, and thereby advertising revenue. At the time of the 1975 reform, however, these developments were still unforeseen.

6.3.2 *Key rhetorical commitments*

6.3.2.1 *Pluralism*

This first point is key because of the importance the value of pluralism acquired during the course of the parliamentary debate prior to the passage of the 1975 reform and in subsequent rulings of the Constitutional Court. Roberto Zaccaria, a leading jurist in the field of telecommunications (as well as former President of Rai and parliamentarian), has defined pluralism as "the most important constitutional value in the field of telecommunications" (Zaccaria, 1998, p. 162). Yet the basis for this importance is not self-evident. Pluralism is not a constitutional requirement: or rather, there is nothing in the text of the Italian constitution which refers to pluralism or any similar concept; and the process of elucidation of the 'constitutional value' of pluralism appears mysterious. The 1974 decision does not use the term 'pluralism' in connection with the media. It does mention the 'social pluralism' found in Italian society, which the media ought to reflect; but the term is used as descriptively, not as indicative of any value-claim, still less any inference from the text of the Constitution. The same holds for the court's (two) references to a "plurality of sources of information" — again, the word is used as a descriptive term. Thus, any support for the idea that pluralism in the media

is a constitutional value cannot be based on what the Constitutional Court did in its 1974 decision, nor indeed on any other Court decisions around that time.

The stated aim of the law, as revealed in the parliamentary debates prior to its passage, was to implement the (supposed) principles of the Court's sentence. The majority opinion of the committee which reported on the draft bill⁵⁵ summarised the 'decatalogue' of commandments issued by the Court in its decision, but did so incorrectly, falsely attributing to the Court a request for "*l'obiettività dei programmi di informazione e il pluralismo di pensiero nei programmi culturali*", a phrase which is nowhere found in either of the Court's landmark decisions of 1974. The same error was made in the plenary: Gianfranco Merli (DC), speaking for the majority, argued that

"certain arguments... justify the choice of pluralism, which is at the base of the Constitutional Court's judgement... The concept of pluralistic information as a duty and thus as a service, which affects all means of communication, as the Court has recently held in its judgement, causes us to revisit the reform of Rai"⁵⁶

Why, if the Court had not, in the text of its decision, made pluralism the fundamental constitutional value in the field of the media, did the Parliament act as if it had? Legislators may have uncovered a value "hidden" in the Court's decision; or they may have made a mistake; or, as it most likely, they have 'discovered' pluralism in the court's ruling in order to win greater legitimacy for a value that had essentially political roots.

In order to make this case, it is necessary to establish the context in which the reform law was passed. As already noted, the concession granted to Rai was due to expire; the Court's judgement only increased the pressure for quick parliamentary passage of some law on Rai. Quick parliamentary passage, however, was not something that the fourth Moro government — a minority government formed by the DC and the PRI — could guarantee. The DC was in

55 Relazione della Commissione presentata il 7 marzo 1975, on progetto di legge AC3448, "Nuove norme in materia di diffusione radiofonica e televisiva" (http://legislature.camera.it/_dati/leg06/lavori/stampati/pdf/34480002_F001.pdf)

56 Debate of the 13th March 1975, col. 20903, emphasis added

a poor state following the failure of the ‘No’ campaign in the previous year’s referendum, and what parliamentary energy the party could muster was employed in the passage of the public order law, the *legge Reale* (Ginsborg, 1990, p. 371). Consequently, any reform legislation capable of being approved in short order would have to win the support, not just of a parliamentary majority, but of a sufficiently large majority to prevent parliamentary obstructionism.

The PCI was disposed to form part of this super-majority. By 1975, the party had embarked on the process of moderation that would lead it, two years later, to the historic compromise and parliamentary support for a DC-led government. Overt parliamentary obstruction of an important piece of reform legislation would have seemed incongruous with this new dash for respectability.

At the same time, the PCI remained a Gramscite party, which viewed television as “an instrument for the conditioning of the subaltern classes along the lines of a bourgeois model” (Chiarenza, 2002, p. 166-7). Abetting the DC in the reform of such an instrument would seem antithetical to the party’s interests. Consequently, it was necessary that the reform be portrayed as furthering a value which could be shared by the PCI.

Pluralism was just such a value. Part of the move towards the historic compromise was terminological. As Alessandro Pizzorno put it,

“The PCI needed to declare its ideological conversion. “Democratic” it was by definition. “Liberal”? This would have been a bit much. “Pluralism” was a relatively fresh term. Few knew what it meant: it would therefore be discussed for quite some time, if only to find out what it meant” (in Ufficio Stampa della Rai, 1976, p. 248)

The value was equally palatable to the DC, harking back to the arguments made in debates in the Constituent Assembly concerning the ‘pluralistic society’, which some DC politicians supported as a *via media* between “the two false and opposing doctrines of individualism... and collectivism”. (Matteucci *et al.*, 1976, p. 721).

Consequently, the value of pluralism was sufficiently politically convenient — and vague — as to allow the approval

of the reform, which occurred, with an ample majority on the 26th March 1975.

6.3.2.2 *Objectivity and impartiality*

The dominance of pluralism is particularly surprising when one realises that other values which have been repeatedly employed in other Western democracies as regulatory values in the media — the values of objectivity and impartiality — were not only present in the Court's 1974 ruling, but were given greater emphasis. The 'objectivity' and 'impartiality' of information were each mentioned five times in the 1974 judgement. These values were not reducible to pluralism, nor could they be considered manifestations thereof: "so-called pluralism of information, whilst having a relationship with objectivity, nevertheless cannot substitute for it" (Fragola, 1983, p. 197). The jurisprudential basis for these values was also less tendentious than that supporting the value of pluralism, even if it rested on a rather bald assertion by the court: 'objectivity' and 'impartiality' were two characteristics which a state monopoly in television would have to meet if it were to qualify as a service of general interest in the sense of article 43 of the Constitution - presumably because the public had a 'general interest' in information of this kind.

Furthermore, the Court was able to cite references to these concepts in previous rulings;⁵⁷ had it wished, it could have cited legislation of 1947 establishing the parliamentary supervisory committee in public broadcasting, which was to act so as to secure "the objectivity and impartiality of information".

Yet even by the time of the legislative work on the reform of Rai — and in conformity with the view expressed above that privileging pluralism served a political purpose — a majority of parties had chosen to emphasise the concept of pluralism in preference to these other values. It was left to deputies of the neo-fascist MSI-DN to point out that impartiality and objectivity had been neglected:

"It was said: a plurality of voices, autonomy, independence. Yet the Commission, and with this the majority, has not sought to include the

⁵⁷ Sentenza no. 59/60

other characteristics which were by contrast indispensable and binding in the judgement of the constitutional court, or the objectivity, the impartiality and the completeness of information. These three conditions are interdependent, connected, and cannot be cut off from each other: free information has a value insofar as these three conditions are found. And yet in the legislative proposal the concept is not found: there are only scattered references”⁵⁸

Why was objectivity so difficult a concept for the various parties to agree on? First, many Marxists argued that objectivity was, in theory or in practice, a bourgeois concept used to maintain hegemony and avoid the fall of capitalism to its own internal contradictions. For Lidia Serenari,

“objectivity does not exist in a society divided into classes: either one speaks for the class in power or for the class opposing it. The fiction that one can speak for all, ignoring class, is typically bourgeois in that it aims to avoid the accumulation of contradiction and class conflict, instead consolidating the current situation” (quoted in [Chiarenza, 2002](#), p. 169, see also Cesareo on page [1.4.2](#)).

The PCI, perhaps seeking to demonstrate a certain degree of moderation in the debate, tried to admit some role for objectivity, but on its own terms, leading to the following contradiction-in-terms from a Central Committee meeting of 1970:

“objectivity, to have any commonly acceptable meaning, must refer to the democratic and anti-fascist principles of the Constitution” (quoted in [Chiarenza, 2002](#), p. 172)

The PSI, by contrast, adopted a different tack in a 1970 report:⁵⁹

“the principal error that has been and is made when discussing Rai is precisely the wish that

⁵⁸ Deputy Baghino (MSI-DN), debate of the 24th March 1975.

⁵⁹ The report was authored by Giuliano Amato and Enzo Cheli. Amato would later become prime minister in the period leading up to the second great reform of Rai (1993). Cheli would be appointed as President of Rai seven years later. Critics of objectivity and impartiality thus playing leading roles in Rai’s future.

every broadcaster be impartial. If one continues on this road one inevitably finishes bogged down in mechanisms of censure. As far as impartiality is concerned what counts is the result in terms of reception [of information]; which, in a regime of liberty, must be carried out so that all are supplied with information and the judgements that will allow them a choice about what is happening" (quoted in [Chiarenza, 2002](#), p. 172).

It is not too difficult to carry out a political reading of these two stands: the PCI emphasised constitutionality in order to benefit from its position as a part of the *arco costituzionale*, and thus implicitly to exclude extremist parties to its left and the right of the political spectrum (the MSI-DN). The PSI wished to avoid 'censorious' mechanisms because it could never aspire to a majority within Rai, but, as the second largest party in government, could control certain units within the broadcaster. More generally, the notion of objectivity received little support within the DC and the PCI because the notion that there could be a position which was outwith, and independent of, their respective normative and cognitive systems (the Catholic Church and Gramscian Marxism respectively) was anathema.

The debate concerning objectivity did not operate at an exclusively party political level (though the continued input of the parties is in itself revealing): journalists and editors in the print press had also debated the issue. Had they united around the concept of objectivity, the debate concerning objectivity in broadcasting might have turned out differently. Indeed, had the debate about the reform of Rai taken place a few years later, the concept might have stood in better stead, for the late seventies were marked by greater rhetorical and actual moves towards objectivity. In January of 1976, *Repubblica* was born, and the new paper, whilst openly declaring itself to belong to the left, made "repeated references to the liberal political model: 'to judge the facts, for better or worse, even if they emerge from the area in which one has chosen to be politically active'" ([Castronovo et al., 1979](#), p. 8). It was the first post-war expression of CP Scott's famous dictum, "comment is free, but facts are sacred".

Equally, the newspaper which would within twenty years cede its primacy to *Repubblica*, the *Corriere della Sera*, openly

pursued objectivity during this period. The newspaper was bought by the Rizzoli group. The development was welcomed by staff journalists who viewed the group as an *editore puro*, or an owner with no other economic interests which might lead to conflicts of interest or overt interference in output by the proprietors. The new editor, Piero Ottone, had long argued for more objective reporting (as we shall see below), and once again Enzo Biagi emerged as a high-profile new hire to signal a commitment to objectivity.

These commitments to objectivity, despite coming from what are now the two largest news dailies in Italy, were at the avant-garde then, and were even more so at the time of the reform of Rai. Within the profession, commitment to objectivity was limited; what support there was crossed party-political lines. Moreover, opponents of objectivity had strong philosophical support on their side: Umberto Eco, writing in a famous article of 1969 in *Espresso*, derided the concept of objectivity as a ‘myth’ and, worse, a ‘manifestation of false consciousness’. In Mazzanti’s paraphrase,

“to believe in this myth. . . is to believe, or, still worse, in bad faith have others believe, that it is possible to relate the news without interpreting it: more generally, to imply that a certain piece of news, an article in the newspaper, or a television bulletin, is in a position to offer an image of reality as it is, without manipulating or distorting the latter. . . It is absolutely illegitimate to speak of this mirror-theory [*di specularità*]: the reality which appears in the media is a reality which is inevitably interpreted. For example, in the same moment in which one chooses to publish, rather than throw out, one news item, an interpretative act is carried out, deriving from the importance that the journalist judges that news should have” (Mazzanti, 1991, p. 193).

Eco’s position was not uncontested; thus who did disagree with him generally argued that there were concrete steps that the Italian press could and ought to take in order to become more objective, and thus, that the concept of objectivity was of use. Ottone himself admitted that

“It is true that absolute objectivity does not exist, but Umberto Eco is wrong, according to me, to place the problem on this level, because he

ends up by saying things which are so obvious as to become irrelevant. It is as if, discovering a child stealing some jam, we were to begin a disquisition on the impossibility of absolute honesty. Absolute honesty is a utopia, fine; but there's no need to steal the jam" (Ottone, 1969)

Prescinding from debates on the possibility of absolute objectivity, these exchanges show that the myth of objectivity was not accepted in Italy as it was in other countries, and was instead interpreted by the majority of politicians and a plurality of journalists as, at best, a distraction; at worse, a philosophically misleading concept. Consequently, this myth could not play any role in defending the broadcaster. During the preparatory works for the 1975 reform, "certain projects foresaw the institution of a watchdog committee, granted specific powers, and responsible for the objectivity of programs. According to others, however, objectivity could only grow from confrontation; it thus became necessary to ensure the right of access... it is this second tendency which is found in law no. 103" (quoted in Chiarenza, 2002, p. 172?) Yet, as we shall see, greater 'access', and the concept of pluralism, through influencing the structure of the broadcaster, further accentuated its dependence on politics.

6.3.3 *Concrete rules*

During this period, the idea of rules concerning all Rai journalists — and in particular, rules concerning the treatment of news — disappeared. In large part, this was a natural consequence of the changes in the structure of the company discussed below (6.3.4). Anticipating that section, we may say that the idea of rules governing all of Rai's output fell away because there was no longer any coordination between the three television channels, and because the directors of the different rete and testate, despite being beneficiaries of the decentralization implemented by the 1975 reform, were themselves subject to centripetal pressures.

As far as coordination between the different directors was concerned, one director, Ugo Zatterin, lamented the fact that, whilst previously the directors had had regular meetings in order to coordinate their positions vis-à-vis the management, especially as far as hiring decisions were

concerned, there were no such meetings between January 1982 and September 1984 (Brancati, 1984). Given that much power had been devolved from the central administration to the *rete* [channel] and *testate* [division] directors, any coordination would have had to come from them, and yet this never happened.

The directors of the *reti* and *testate* were also, however, subject to pressures from below. Due to broader changes in Italian journalism which also took place in the late seventies, the different *comitati di redazione* (editorial committees), composed of the journalists, had acquired substantial powers in relation to their directors, including the right to hear the “political-editorial line of the director” and vote on it, and subsequently to express their confidence (or lack thereof) in the director at any subsequent point. Directors who were not sufficiently agile to placate their subordinates were consequently subjected to no-confidence votes; not approved by the *comitati di redazione* at all, or made to sweat: Nuccio Fava and Nino Rizzo Nervo, both left-leaning former Christian Democrats, reportedly had a torrid time as successive directors of TG3 due to poor relations with their *comitati di redazione* which, implicitly, were of the secular left (Vespa, 2002, p. 313). Because the journalists in the different *reti* and *testate* were often selected on party political grounds, with each channel nominally affiliated to a particular political area (see below), this had the effect of accentuating the partisan character of each *reti* or *testate*, and depriving Rai of the coordination which could mute these aspects.

The first stirrings of coordination only began when private competitors began to emerge and Rai needed to demonstrate its ability to cope with competition. “Awareness is growing that internal competition (a guarantee of pluralism at the time of the monopoly) must now be substituted with a team game in order to sustain competition with the private channels” (Manca, 1987). And yet Rai’s first editorial plan was only approved in 1988 — after a previous struggle had given greater power to the director-general, Biagio Agnes (Marletti, 1988), and after some years of commercial competition.

“It is, roughly speaking, a political document in which this improper editor, a politically appointed board, explains what it expects from its executives. But, as Manca has explained, it is

also a sort of self-regulation that the broadcaster has given itself” (Brancati, 1988b)

The logic behind this plan was to protect the company from attacks. Agnes was explicit about this in a later meeting, where he is reported to have argued that

“We can’t be continually attacked from the outside... and have to go forward without even some cover from the editor [here, the board]. Give me a document I can hold on to, and from which I can give instructions” (Brancati, 1988a).

Yet this strategy was only being tried thirteen years after the original reform, and only five years before further radical reform — intended to be temporary — would change once more the powers of the director-general, further limiting his and the board’s ability to impose rules governing content.

6.3.4 *Structure, organization, recruitment in news*

The absence of rules governing content can in large part be explained by the way the reform law of 1975 structured the broadcaster. The law established a sixteen member administrative council, of which ten were to be elected by parliament, and six by the major stakeholder (IRI, and thus indirectly the government). The council was formally entrusted with the management of the company; the legislative intent was clearly to avoid another powerful director-general like Bernabei. It was “perhaps in an excess of *garantismo*” which led to “the concentration of too many tasks in the hands of the council” — many of whose members lacked business experience (Pini, 1978, p. 14) — “with the result of paralysing the company... In essence there were but two possible models for the council: that of the ‘guarantee’ council... and that of the ‘governing’ council (a collective managing director, as has been said numerous times). The ambiguity... [of the law was] to have fused these together in a manner which is not easy to disentangle” (Zaccaria, 1984, p. 19).

The power (unusual in comparative terms) of the directly-appointed level within the broadcaster might have been an impediment to strong coherent management of the broadcaster irrespective of the other provisions of the law; but

what was more important for the future development of the broadcaster was the power given to the channel directors. Article 13 of the 1975 law went into exceeding detail concerning the organisation of the reformed broadcaster, which was to have two television and three radio news bulletins, each with their own director reporting directly to the director-general. Additionally, each channel was to have “its own separate complement of organizational and administrative staff”. Thus supplied with the necessary administrative resources, these *rete* and *testate* were in a position to draw up programme proposals which would be ‘co-ordinated’ by the director-general, who emerged from the reform greatly weakened. The countervailing tendencies within the law, which envisaged coordination of time-slots and budgets were never implemented (Pini, 1978, p. 163). The director-general thus appeared as more of a referee between competing factions than an executive in his own right: Scotto Lavina (1984, p. 165) goes so far as to claim that

“From that moment, from March 1976, the start date for the new *telegiornali* and the entry into force of the new bodies, it no longer makes sense to speak of Rai’s TV schedule, but only of the offer (and thus the schedule) of the first and second channels. . . in essence the director-general’s office was relegated to the position of a notary, so much were the major decisions taken by the networks under their own coordination”

The director-general’s role was thus an unhappy one, and three appointees from different backgrounds succeeded one another in rapid succession (Scotto Lavina, 1984, p. 164).

This proliferation of posts and the subtraction of power away from the office of the director-general was a direct consequence of the adoption of pluralism as the guiding principle for the broadcaster. Multiple networks and news desks were instituted “so as to pay the debt of pluralism contracted by the reform law” (Mauri, 1984, p. 268). This was made clear in the debate prior to passage of the law: DC deputy Frau described the principle of the reform as being that of

“a plurality of voices within radio and television which may express themselves through different opinions, *through* two different structures

which *allow* different opinions to be expressed” (debate of the 12th March, col. no 20844, emphasis added)

Manca (DC) expressed most fully the logic of this structural pluralism:

“the plurality of rete and testate giornalistiche do not follow the principles of lottizzazione⁶⁰, but rather that of pluralism, which aims not at following the myth of objective information, but to build, concretely, the conditions for the completeness - that is to say, the impartiality - of the news. In other terms, it is from the pluralism of television networks and journalistic testate that the full expression of the professional capacity of our journalists and cultural workers flows, because the diversity and plurality of voices are in much better position to offer a more faithful and complete picture of a variegated, complex, and, indeed, pluralistic, reality, such as is found in Italian society” (debate of the 13th March, col. no 20935, emphasis added)

A plurality of *rete* and *testate* was therefore desirable, not in and of itself, but because such units, independently formed and independently managed, and thus in a position to compete, can offer a better, more truthful picture of reality. Although no legislator talked of it in such terms, the argument is similar to the one Milton (1792) made in his *Areopagitica*:

“there must be many schisms and many dissections made in the quarry and in the timber, ere the house of God can be built”

Thus did the reform law create schisms and dissections in the quarry and timber of the public broadcaster. Of course, these dissections were also determined by less principled reasons.

Why did journalist and executives accept this system? In the same way that having more posts available made it easier for important posts to be subdivided between the parties, having more positions of responsibility meant that more journalists could aspire to executive positions; that

60 The division of posts within the broadcaster amongst the political parties.

fewer would lose out in the kind of hotly contested promotion fights that might take place in a more centralised broadcaster; and that any journalists or executives who fell out of favour could be given a promotion to a peripheral area should they become useful at a later time. That is, it

“also derived from the demand from the same bureaucracy and technocratic structures within the company to regulate in the quickest manner possible the unending questions of hierarchy, of division of labour, of major and minor management issues, which in any complex organization threaten daily the functioning of the machine itself” (Ortoleva, 1994, p. 92)

The division of posts was connected to the practice of *lottizzazione* — of the division of posts within the broadcaster between the parties. *Lottizzazione* had begun during the Bernabei period, as journalists and managers close to the PSI and the Social Democrats were appointed, but the period after 1975 was the period of ‘classic’ *lottizzazione* — which was gradually extended to encompass the Communist party in 1986, when, after a meeting between Walter Veltroni, Biagio Agnes, and Enrico Manca, the party was given the right to designate the channel director of RaiTre and the editor of the associated TG3 (Balassone and Guglielmi, 1995, p. 11).

6.3.5 *Political interference*

Political interference during this period in large part consisted in the practice of *lottizzazione* — in the securing of posts for faithful journalists who would subsequently act in the interests of their sponsors. The system was so pervasive as to require regimentation: according to an unattributed formula, in every wave of appointments the DC was entitled to six seats, the PCI three, the PSI two, and the Liberals, Republicans and Social Democrats one each (Mancini, 2009, p. 27).

The parties continued to ask in public for greater objectivity, but this did not lead them to endorse the natural concomitant of objectivity, namely, a news division organised in a way that did not reflect the strength of the parties, but rather a single, objective account of news, tailored, if need

be, to different audiences. One polling company surveyed parliamentarians on whether they would prefer if the current division of the seats between political parties were abolished. A plurality (48%) said that they wished things to remain as they were; only 31% wished to see the current division between parties changed (Ricci, 1989).

That the parties were widely reported to be requesting, and obtaining, a division of posts based on party political strength, is not in itself sufficient to conclude that the broadcaster had low levels of independence — it is entirely possible, if improbable, that these journalists were faithless to their patrons. There are, and were, multiple responses to the issue of *lottizzazione*: many journalists have claimed that *lottizzazione* does not exist, that others might have been *lottizzati* but that they themselves were not, and so on (Padovani, 2005, ch. 4 and *passim*); but there are instances of journalists who in debate admit that their work is conditioned by the party to whom they owe their position. This, for example, was the case of Bruno Vespa, who declared in one interview that he considered the Christian Democratic party his “reference point” (*editore di riferimento*): in any case, the admission did not hurt Vespa’s career, and for the past thirteen years he has hosted *Porta a Porta*, the most watched political debate show on Italian television, in addition to annually publishing books with Rai’s publishing arm, Rai-Eri.

6.4 NEW HOPES DASHED (1993 — 2008)

6.4.1 *The setting*

Between 1992 and 1994, the Italian party system collapsed under the weight of multiple corruption scandals (*Tangentopoli*). In the wave of anti-party sentiment, the parliament elected in 1992 undertook a series of technocratic reforms, including reform of Rai. The law was intended to reduce party interference in Rai until a comprehensive television law could resolve the issue. To pursue these goals, the board was reduced from sixteen to five members who would no longer be appointed by the government and the parliament, but rather by the Presidents of the two chambers. Appointments, however, were to last for two years only, in a nod to the ‘provisory’ nature of the reform bill. This choice was

predicated on the belief that the presidents would continue to be drawn from the two principal opposing coalitions, yet instead this practise was discontinued in 1994 with the move to a more majoritarian political system. Yet despite this, the reform achieved its objective, and fewer partisan nominees were appointed (see chapter 4).

More serious than appointments were Rai's finances which were seriously threatened in 1992 by a deterioration in the real value of the licence fee and by a down-turn in the advertising market as a result of the recession of 1991 — 1993. Rai's debts gave the government and parliament of the day extraordinary leverage over the company, as ad-hoc decrees were required in order to keep the company in business.

Rai's weakness came at an inopportune moment. If any pre-existing parties had benefited from Tangentopoli, it was those parties which had been most excluded from the practice of *lottizzazione*, the former Communist party, now the Left Democrats (*Democratici di Sinistra*, DS), and the post-Fascist *Movimento Sociale Italiano*, now the National Alliance (*Allianza Nazionale*, AN). These parties bore grudges in proportion to their past exclusion (see for example, the introductions by Gianfranco Fini and Walter Veltroni in [Mazza and Agnes, 2004](#), pp. ix - 1). Yet the most important party for Rai was the new party, *Forza Italia*, founded by Silvio Berlusconi in order to compete in the 1994 elections. Berlusconi's position both as prime minister (May 1994 - Dec. 1994; 2001 - 2006; 2008 -) and as owner of Rai's principal competitor Mediaset, would be one of the most important structural problems facing Rai; Berlusconi's interference in Rai would become one of the most important contingent problems for Rai during the Second Republic.

These problems were only potential problems when the first board of the 'new' Rai was appointed in July 1993. This board – nicknamed the 'board of the Professors' – sought to remove employees appointed for their political sympathies rather than for their ability; and to re-cast Rai's journalism in a consciously 'Anglo-Saxon' mould. It failed. The reasons why it failed illustrate some of the key claims of this thesis: that PSB chief executives must have security of tenure; that a history of self-regulation within the press aids self-regulation within the broadcaster; and that journalists will continue to be perceived as partisan where the potential recruitment pool is partisan.

6.4.2 *Key rhetorical commitments*

In 1993 Rai seemed to have turned back to the original values it was called upon to uphold, namely impartiality and objectivity. These, after all, remained the terms of the law on television, the legge Mammì, which defined the principles of broadcasting in its first article as involving “pluralism, objectivity, completeness and impartiality of information”, though with no mention of how disputes between these various values might be resolved.

The call to impartiality and objectivity was acted upon by the new board, and motivated many of the changes to the organization of news which are discussed below. Yet, for reasons which will be discussed later, that experiment failed, and the ideas of impartiality and objectivity were once again interred. The concept of impartiality seemed to have been subsumed under that of pluralism: for Roberto Zaccaria,

“Zaccaria: My task was made up of two words. First, independence: to be, to the greatest extent possible, independent of parties, and of the government. Second, pluralism: to give light to the diversity present in the company and in the country.

Question: But we’ve talked of 3 values here: independence, pluralism, and impartiality...

Zaccaria: Yes, but pluralism and impartiality are concepts very close together. Certainly, one can be a sole person giving account of many varied points of view; this ideal is, however, a little theoretical [inaudible]; it’s difficult for one to strip oneself [spogliarsi] totally of one’s subjectivity... I’d say that the three – independence, impartiality, pluralism – can be subsumed under independence”⁶¹

With the end of the experiment initiated by the Professors, and with the entry into politics of Silvio Berlusconi and the consequent passage of the *par condicio* (law no. 515 of the 10th December 1993; law no. 28 of the 22nd February 2000), the concept of pluralism returned as the dominant value in debates concerning Rai. The *par condicio* required not

⁶¹ Interview with author, Rome, summer 2005.

only that party political broadcasts be made by the parties on an equal basis, but also that broadcasters divide their news coverage of the competing parties or blocs on an equal basis, or otherwise, as specified by the sectoral watchdog, the *Autorità per le garanzie nelle comunicazioni* (Agcom).

These laws have made necessary the collection of data on the amount of screen-time given to each competing subject. This monitoring is carried out not just by Agcom (which has gone substantially beyond its mandate [as specified in Art. 1, §6b, paragraph number 9 of law n. 249 of the 31st July 1997], in collecting not merely information on political coverage during electoral periods, but also during normal politics, where no quantitative obligation is placed on broadcasters), but by a number of private organizations. Despite the fact that the *par condicio* only applies during electoral campaigns, data from these organizations were used by Rai, and by those outside it, to alternately defend or attack the broadcaster for a presumed lack of pluralism. The most concerted attempt to reassert this kind of pluralism, and to put this conception on a sounder footing, was made by Roberto Zaccaria, president of Rai between 1998 and 2002. In the run-up to the 2001 elections Zaccaria defended Rai from accusations of impartiality by citing data both from two different monitoring companies which showed that Rai "had respected political pluralism - the principle of the three thirds" (Caviglia, 2001), according to which screen time should be shared equally between the legislative majority ($\frac{1}{3}$), the legislative minority ($\frac{1}{3}$), and the governing institutions ($\frac{1}{3}$).

Zaccaria's use of this principle was sagacious. "Reliance on numbers and quantitative manipulation minimises the need for intimate knowledge and personal trust" — trust which certainly did not exist between the parties and Rai at that time. If "the drive to supplant personal judgement by quantitative rules reflects weakness and vulnerability" (Porter (1995, pp. ix, xi), Zaccaria's move seems appropriate given the weakness and vulnerability of Rai in particular and the Italian journalistic corps in general. This principle also had the advantage of international precedent, having been previously employed by the French *Conseil Supérieur de l'Audiovisuel*. Had it won acceptance in Italy as it did in France, then this conception of pluralism might have become dominant. Unfortunately for Zaccaria, the criterion was not accepted by the legislative minority, who objected

to over-representation of government ministers. Francesco Storace (Alleanza Nazionale) claimed that

"those Italians who do not vote for the Ulivo or Rifondazione have been wiped-out by the public news. Between the 25th January and the 30th April... the majority won with 60% against 40% for the opposition in news programmes; or as much as 70% in the news bulletins" (Fontanarosa, 1998)

This idea of pluralism had already been attacked in the eighties. Whilst a global balance might be attained by Rai, it may either be a global balance because each individual programme is balanced, or it may be a global balance composed of well-distributed partial views. Yet "three twisted mirrors do not make a relatively objective mirror, three partial voices are not mutually correcting, and do not complement each other case-by-case" (Ronchey, 1988). Thinking in terms of the theory outlined in chapter 2, the parties' reactions make sense — what matters is not that output globally be close to the point that a neutral observer would desire, but rather that each individual piece should be sufficiently balanced as to allow the observer to conclude that the journalist was not partisan, and that no better outcome could be achieved by replacing that partisan journalist with a non-partisan one, or vice versa. Indeed, the very reliance on screen-time data may have accentuated this problem, as the differences between the three Rai channels are now more apparent than ever. Consequently, it is perhaps unsurprising that the next president of Rai, Antonio Baldassare, decided not to follow Zaccaria's lead and discontinued the practice of regularly issuing information on screen-time.

6.4.3 *Concrete rules*

Because they saw their task as being more fundamental and involving organizational reform, the board of the Professors did not consider concrete rules governing output. Their reform is dealt with in the next section, but the boards which followed the 'Professors' were, perforce, obliged to consider some rules dealing with the output of the agency. Successive boards continued writing editorial plans of the type first introduced by Biagio Agnes, but these documents had little weight given the limited tenure of their authors.

Trade magazine *Prima Comunicazione* noted that “interest in what goes on at the top management rises only when there are nominations being made or when something affects the fabric of the company... Little importance, for example, to the recently voted editorial plan... four pages which speak of public service [and] pluralism”. It goes on to quote a “veteran of Viale Mazzini” [Rai’s headquarters]:

“It’s a rite that each management team feels they have to carry out... It helps the *Vigilanza*; it gives the politicians something to talk about”⁶²

Previous directors-general have recognised the problem. Gianfranco Iseppi (DG 1996 – 1998) devoted much of his book on public service broadcasting ([Iseppi, 1998](#)) to the need to develop clear ‘mission statements’ for Rai. For Claudio Cappon (DG 2001 – 2002),

“nobody really gives any importance to these written texts, but rather to the eternal negotiation of existence in a political environment... people in Rai don’t feel that these objectives... are something that must be guaranteed by the community”⁶³

Equally, Rai’s ethics code — which, together with the editorial plans, forms the closest thing that Rai has to the BBC’s Editorial Guidelines — commands scarce agreement. Although the code contained nothing new save pre-existing legal requirements,⁶⁴ it was immediately criticised by company trade union USIGRAI as “unacceptable”, a document which “pretends to be constraining like a contract without ever having been discussed with employee representatives”.⁶⁵ There was an internal publicity campaign dealing with the code, but employees were trusted to read the code themselves instead of formal training.

6.4.4 *Organization, structure, recruitment*

The most significant effort undertaken by the board was its attempt to reform Rai’s news output. All board members

62 “Calcetti all’Annunziata”, *Prima Comunicazione*, February 2004

63 Interview with Cappon

64 Interview with Rubens Esposito

65 USIGRAI press release of 27th October 2004

were sensitive to the need for change, but Paolo Murialdi (professor of journalism at the University of Turin) was asked to write a report for the board on the issue (Murialdi, 1994, p. 31). The key problem was the structural duplication of effort in news, with three different news programmes covering very often the same stories. This structure undermined any belief that the news was in some way dictated by external events and objective, in a very limited sense: for if this were the case, what need would there be for three different news programmes which treated the same news events in different ways?

The solution eventually proposed by the board was to have four different news programmes differentiated by subject and by audience segment. The choice was a curious one for a company which was at the time facing severe financial difficulties. Instead of creating an additional, duplicate, set of fixed costs, the company might have reduced costs — and increased profits — by merging the three news programmes into one unit, reducing the total volume of news output, and filling the space with imported or otherwise low-cost programming which would likely have been more attractive to advertisers. Such a choice might have been rejected for several reasons: the board might not have thought potential replacement programming was of sufficient high quality to be put on air without involving Rai in a ‘race to the bottom’ with Mediaset. Yet the choice was not rejected for this reason, but rather for reasons which had to do with the belief that any single news programme is (willingly or otherwise) the inevitable expression of some political position. Murialdi, in discussing possible solutions to the problem of multiple news programmes, arrives at the figure of four news programmes by a process of elimination:

We reject without discussion a single telegiornale. It would be the pawn of the government of the day. On the issue of two telegiornali there is the unknown factor of the majoritarian electoral system. With two political formations, the stronger telegiornale would go to the majority, the other to the opposition. To have three telegiornali smacks of the old tripartite division, because it won't be easy for some to reject the old generalist formula" (Murialdi, 1994, p. 32)

Why would a single news program necessarily be a government appendage? We may construct a plausible chain

of reasoning: there is no news outlet which is free of viewpoint; a single Tg would therefore have some viewpoint; the government's position is, politically speaking, the dominant one; the single Tg would therefore be likely to have the government's position rather than any other. And yet a single Tg could have been a central element in the claim that other PSBs have found so useful in defending their coverage: that the news is the news, and is dictated by events, not by the teams who produce it.

The board's efforts to change Rai's journalism were interpreted not as an attempt to impose impartiality, but rather to impose a carefully calibrated partiality marginally to the centre-left. This interpretation was strongest amongst those on RaiTre. Sandro Curzi and Corradino Mineo paraphrase De Mattè as saying:

“«I want a Rai that doesn't scream», he said, «I want journalism in the English school [*giornalismo all'inglese*], a unitary Rai, which plays a team game». Which is to say: I want a neo-institutional news, prudent and recherché, moderately progressive or prudently moderate according to the way the wind is blowing" (Curzi and Mineo, 1994, p. 125).

The element of novelty — the claim to wish impartiality (*giornalismo all'inglese*) — is essentially ignored or dismissed without any clear rationale. What, after all, is wrong with prudent journalism? In these quotes, we see the interpretation of notionally non-partisan aims in a partisan key.

The same interpretative key would be used when appointments were considered by the board. The board's desire to appoint experienced individuals who would be independent of politics was quixotic: the only individuals who were experienced were individuals who owed their experience to political ties. “It's almost impossible to find a manager, however honest, talented and able, who is not now or ever has been connected to a political grouping. And for that reason it's equally impossible to escape polemics everytime that someone is nominated... Neutrals can't be found; if they exist, no-one believes them to be such; if they genuinely are so, no-one trusts them” (Cardini and Riccio, 1995, p. 38).

One option would have been to dismiss large numbers of executives who had been particularly compromised by politics and promote from within to replace the dismissed executives. This option would have been plagued by multiple difficulties.

First, there was a risk that the dismissal of key individuals would in itself be perceived as a political act. If an individual was appointed thanks to the help of the PSI, anyone who seeks to remove him or her must perforce be an enemy of the PSI, either on the left or the right. Indeed, many individuals attempt to depict their removals as being motivated by political calculations instead of calculations of merit or suitability. The head of personnel, de Domenico, said to Murialdi,

“you’re firing me because I’m a socialist”.
[Murialdi] responded that he would be removed not because he was a socialist, but rather because he was responsible for lottizzazione under the aegis of Andreotti and, above all, Craxi”
(Murialdi, 1994, p. 27)

Second, it was likely that widespread dismissals would have incurred such enmity on the part of the staff that any further reforms would have been blocked immediately. The board was given an early example of this potential when board president Demattè implied in an interview that the main editors should tender their resignations in order to give the board a clean hand, which ultimately led to accusations that the board wished the company ill (Murialdi, 1994, p. 165).

Third, it is likely that dismissals would have needed to have been so pervasive as to seriously threaten Rai’s ability to continue operating. As Murialdi noted, “within Rai there are very few without some kind of label. What to do? Fire them? Is that possible? I don’t think so.” (Murialdi, 1994, entry 3rd October).

Nor would making new appointments be any easier, given the tendency to interpret appointments in a political key. This was demonstrated by the negotiations leading up to the appointment of Gianni Locatelli as Director-General. The board had searched for an external candidate, and had considered Paolo Glisenti (RCS Video), and Emannuele Milano (ex Rai, now Telemontecarlo) (Murialdi, 1994, entry,

19th July), but the former was blocked by Romano Prodi (at the time President of IRI, principal shareholder in Rai). Locatelli's eventual nomination was met with strong criticism by the employees' union USIGRAI, who viewed it as a sign that the reform was "dead", for Locatelli was a "known Catholic". Locatelli was thus considered 'close' to the DC, despite not being a party member (Murialdi, 1994, p. 21).

Equally, the first round of appointments below director-general was met with criticism, particularly from the left. As Murialdi recalls

"The reactions to the Demattè plan from the left and from journalists in Rai have been violent. The Rai editorial assembly has described the plan as inadequate and backwards. Last Thursday's nominations are the proof... that Rai executives are taking up lottizzazione again. Mattucci is socialist, Fuscagni Christian Democratic... Curzi said, 'I see lots of familiar names still circulating' " (Murialdi, 1994, entry of 3rd October).

Thus, the limited stock of journalists with no obvious partisan affiliation — and a willingness to attribute such where none were present — made the board's job extremely difficult. Any round of appointments would have been interpreted in a political light, and would have led those who were discomfited by the appointments to see them as part of a conspiracy, further impeding reform.

6.4.5 *Political interference*

Interference in Rai's operations prior to the elections of 1994 was rather limited. After the appointment of a new board, the pressure placed on the broadcaster grew. One new board member, medieval historian Franco Cardini, claimed that whilst he personally had not been subject to pressure, "I would be lying if I said that the Northern League, the Catholics, and the National Alliance never asked for anything" (Cardini and Riccio, 1995, p. 31, 54).

The influence of the centre-left during its period in government was more muted, concentrated, as it was, on the

structural aspects of the broadcaster, and the repeated re-organizations of the broadcaster which anticipated part-privatization of the broadcaster. It was only with Berlusconi's return to power in 2001 that the issue of the independence of Rai returned to salience.

Berlusconi's *behaviour* towards the media, and Rai in particular, has been just as controversial as his government's media legislation. As noted in the introduction, Berlusconi had, on a state visit to Bulgaria in 2002, declared that "the use that Biagi, Santoro and Luttazzi have made of public television — paid for with public money — is criminal. The new Rai administration must see that this does not happen again". Following this incident — widely reported in the international press — Santoro's contract was not renewed and Biagi's show was discontinued.

There is no evidence, apart from this declaration, to suggest that Berlusconi asked Rai board members directly to dismiss Biagi or Santoro. It is possible that the statement itself was sufficient either to convince members of the Board (appointed by members of Berlusconi's coalition) or the Director-General Agostino Saccà (candidate for re-appointment in two years' time) that not renewing the contracts would win political favour. At the very least the fact that Rai dismissed these individuals after a statement of this nature shows the company was shockingly blasé about public perception of its independence from government.

Direct contact between Berlusconi and Rai employees has often been alleged. Former President of Rai Lucia Annunziata claimed to 'know for a fact' that Berlusconi called television executives behind her back. Direct evidence, however, was not found, until December 2007, when *Espresso* published a transcript of a phone call between Berlusconi and Saccà (by this time director of fiction) in which Berlusconi asked for two women to be given auditions for upcoming dramas. (The women were close to centre-left senators Berlusconi was allegedly trying to corrupt). Following the publication of the transcripts Saccà was not dismissed, only transferred to a less important post; even this measure was met with opposition from the centre-right members of the board.

Whilst this evidence demonstrates that Berlusconi can ask for favours at the broadcaster, and get them, one can overstate Berlusconi's influence on public television. I have

elsewhere (Hanretty, 2007b) demonstrated that there was no big shift in Rai's coverage, measured in terms of the screen-time given to parties of the left and right respectively, before and after Berlusconi's coalition got the chance to nominate a new board; continued political fighting over the broadcaster is thus likely to be part of a longer, positional game aimed at cementing influence in the media.

6.5 CONCLUSION

Rai has, at a number of points in its history, come close to developing rules of conduct which are obeyed by its workforce and which affect the broadcast content produced by them. At no point has it come close to developing written codes which approach in length or sophistication the written codes developed by either the BBC or even Sveriges Television; and at no point have these codes ever served as a basis for resolving politicians' complaints: the normal mode of recourse for aggrieved politicians remains to bring a defamation case against Rai journalists. Nor have these codes always aimed at producing content of the likes that might be produced by an impartial observer: the manuals produced under Filiberto Guala were principally concerned with reinforcing the hegemony of the Christian Democratic party's view of society.

Yet at certain points these attempts at developing rules of conduct have given the company a modicum of independence. This was the case under Bernabei; it was somewhat the case under Agnes; and very recently it seems that the experiment has been taken on again by Claudio Cappon, who has dealt with issues like the Saccà case by referring them to internal complaints panels (n.a., 2008). Yet at each point, these reforms have been halted by ill-advised institutional reform, reform which has continually limited the legal independence afforded the broadcaster, which has never subtracted from the political influence bearing on the broadcaster, only divided it; and which has caused considerable turnover in the company.

Rai has therefore not just been plagued by structural factors such as the limited size of the market for news and the limited degree of legal protection: it has also been affected by bad decisions and bad timing. Indeed, Italy seems to have slipped behind Spain, where the reform efforts seem

to have paid greater attention to objectivity and less concern with pluralism, and have in any case paid much greater attention to the term lengths of executives. This relative regression can be seen, for example, in Sabina Guzzanti's film, *Viva Zapatero!*; Guzzanti — another individual who left Rai in a storm of political protest — lauds the efforts of the Zapatero government to reform RTVE, seeing in it a model for Italy to follow. But whereas political influence over RTVE came from the government, and required only the government to forswear such influence, political influence over Rai is widely distributed, and reform would require a series of actors to give up influence voluntarily. It is for that reason that reform efforts have failed in the past;⁶⁶ for that reason that they remain likely to fail again in the future.

Nor are there any incentives for reform, since efforts to deal with the conflict of interest and reform the broadcasting system lack a natural constituency in Italy. Whilst there has been a succession of extremely vocal popular protests against Berlusconi, the conflict of interests he embodies, and political control over Rai, these movements, in particular the so-called *girotondisti*, have largely been confined to the educated middle-classes, as already noted above (see page 21).

The argument which leads to this rather pessimistic conclusion, and indeed the rest of the chapter itself, can be summed up thusly:

- First, pre-Fascist Italy, whilst it displayed some stirrings of professionalism in the north, was never able to develop either a market-reliant news agency, nor any professional association of journalists.
- Second, and consequently, Rai had to develop an autonomous news-gathering capacity without being able to import any professional norms to defend its output
- Given this lack of professional norms concerning output, and given the limited legal protection vis-à-vis the Ministry of Posts and Telegraphs, Rai was born with limited independence.
- Third, calls for reform and the adoption of professional norms of objectivity and impartiality were ignored; instead, norms which derived from political

⁶⁶ See, for example, Paul Ginsborg's account of the left's attempt at reform, in [Ginsborg \(2004, ch. 4\)](#)

compromise – such as the pursuit of pluralism – were adopted.

- Fourth, these norms, however, have failed to defend the company, and have instead legitimated further practices of lottizzazione.
- Fifth, and consequently, any new reform effort which aims at increasing the company's independence is likely to falter through offending entrenched political interests for whom the genuine independence of Rai from politics would mean the end of their career.

The outlook for Rai is thus bleaker than the outlook for the comparable case, the Spanish broadcaster RTVE, which is discussed in the next section. Whilst in Spain, the initial conditions – an extremely limited market for news – were equally poor, certain acts, such as the Franco regime's greater emphasis on journalistic training, were of paradoxical benefit to the broadcaster. In Italy, by contrast, poor initial conditions were compounded by badly thought out reform efforts brokered through what was, in certain senses, an impeccably democratic compromise.

RADIOTELEVISIÓN ESPAÑOLA

7.1 FROM DICTATORSHIP TO TRANSITION (1923 — 1977)

The first broadcaster in Spain began operations in Autumn 1923 under the de Rivera dictatorship. Its position was retrospectively legitimated by a royal decree of the following year. The decree allowed the government to grant broadcasting concessions to multiple private entities, a considerable contrast with the legal position in most of the rest of Europe. During the short-lived Second Republic proposals were made to establish a public service broadcaster, but the pressures of Civil War meant that these proposals were dead letters (Bustamante, 2007, pp. 19–20).

The Francoist victory in the civil war meant that only private operators with fascist sympathies could continue to broadcast. There were four principal broadcasters, each with strong links to the regime: two under the control of the fascist party, one a wing of the Francoist trade union, and the official broadcaster, *Radio Nacional de España* (RNE), which was a division within the Ministry of Popular Education (until 1951) and subsequently the Ministry of Information and Tourism (1951 onwards) (Bustamante, 2007, pp. 21, 24).

In theory ministry and broadcaster were separate, but the head of the ministerial *Servicio de Radiodifusión* was at the same time the Director-General of RNE. The fiction was, however, maintained: in 1957 a new, 'autonomous' administrative organ was created to administer RNE, but it was never implemented. Instead, the ministry's control over broadcasting was extended in the following year when it was granted exclusive responsibility for television broadcasting, forming *Televisión Española* (TVE). In 1973 the two

Figure 7.1: RTVE timeline

- 1923 First experiments with radio •
- 1956 Preventative censorship formally abolished •
- 1967 Radio and Television School established •
- 1973 Radio and television merge to form RTVE •
- 1980 RTVE given new statute •
- 1996 Aznar government •
- 2004 Zapatero reforms •

units (RNE and TVE) were merged to form *Radio Televisión Española* (RTVE), which again was theoretically independent from the ministry, but to which it remained inextricably linked (Bustamante, 2007, pp. 31, 47).

Nominal competition in the market for radio did not lead to the development of broadcast journalism. The market was hardly an open one: the directors of these stations were nominated by the regime, and, were this not enough to quash any possibility of dissonant messages being transmitted, the private emitters were prevented by law from broadcasting their own news bulletins, being instead forced to host fifteen minute news bulletins from the state broadcaster RNE (the so-called *partes*), an imposition which was only removed in 1977. The later television news bulletins were slightly better, being sourced from two American news agencies, Columbia Broadcasting System (CBS) and United Press International (UPI) (Bustamante, 2007, p. 33).

Nor, indeed, was the market for news in general open. The regime maintained rigid control over everything that was written and broadcast. The “war-time” press legislation of 1938 permitted preventative censure, and was not lifted

until the passage of the new press law, the *Ley Fraga*, in 1956, which formally banned the practice. Yet a more potent control was undoubtedly the power to limit entry into the profession: following the Francoist victory, only 1,800 of the 4000 applications to practice journalism were accepted.

The regime's media policy was not purely restrictive. Although [Bustamante \(2007, p. 37\)](#) judges them to have been largely unsuccessful, a number of training institutions were set up by the regime: the *Escuela Oficial de Radio y Televisión* was founded in 1967, along side the *Escuela Oficial de Periodismo* and the *Istituto de la Opinión Pública*. Although these three institutions were eventually merged into the newly-minted *Facultades de Ciencias de la Información* in 1972, the formation of these department was in itself a comparatively early development compared to other Mediterranean countries.

In general, the official and actual aim of journalism during this period was the glorification of the regime and the moral views which supported it. In this, the regime was optimistic about the potential of the new medium.

“[There are] two fundamental principles which must be maintained, supported, and which must direct any future development of television in Spain: orthodoxy, and religious and moral rigour, in full respect for the norms that the Catholic Church may lay down, and the spirit of service and that self-same service, which corresponds to the great ideals of the National Movement”
(quoted in [Bustamante, 2007, p. 31](#))

Towards the end of the regime, pressure on the broadcaster became less ideational and subtle, and more blatant and manifest, as a number of television workers were accused of associating with illegal groups and disseminating propaganda. Nevertheless, in Spain's pacted transition, many of the leaders in RTVE present in these years would later play key roles in the first democratic ministries — including Adolfo Suárez, a future prime minister as well as director-general of RTVE between 1969 and 1973.

7.2 THE EARLY DEMOCRATIC YEARS (1977 — 1996)

Spain's transition to democracy began with Franco's death in November 1975. The process of transition was long, and RTVE was no exception. It passed from the control of the Ministry of Information and Tourism to the Ministry of Culture, this time as an autonomous unit (*organismo autónomo*) of the ministry instead of a *de facto* sub-unit. Following this move, a provisional Board of Governors (*consejo rector*) was appointed, charged both with overseeing RTVE's performance, and with drawing up a new statute to govern the broadcaster.

Despite criticisms of the *consejo's* composition (the PSOE withdrew its members in protest at the UDC government's appointing numerous co-partisans), the non-governing parties largely accepted the provisions of the statute as drafted. "In an atmosphere of general satisfaction, the only voices of dissent came from the unions and the communist group within RTVE, for whom the Statute marginalized workers, did not impose limits on the amount of advertising revenue the public broadcaster could raise and, above all, foresaw a non-democratic method of appointing the Director-General, preserving the power exercised by the Government" (Bustamante, 2007, p. 94).

Whilst the statute was formally approved in 1980, the climate introduced by the failed coup attempt of the 23rd February 1981 meant that links between the executive and the broadcaster remained tight, and genuine organizational reform within the broadcaster was not implemented until 1982.

The choice of regulatory concepts during the transition period is particularly interesting. The concept of pluralism has been fruitfully deployed in the study of democratization; one might therefore have expected the concept of pluralism to be prevalent, if not dominant, in the legislative texts and declarations of this period. Instead, surprisingly, the concept of objectivity emerged as the key regulatory concept, both in legal documents and in the aspirations and declarations of the principal protagonists. One of the key tasks of the *Consejo Rector* was to monitor "respect for the objectivity of information" (Bustamante, 2007, p. 67). Equally, Article 4 of the Statute, which details the principles to be followed by RTVE, lists the "objectivity, truthfulness, and impartiality

of information” (clause (a)) and “the separation of information and opinion” (clause (b)) before “respect for political, religious, social, cultural and linguistic pluralism” (clause (c)); and even here, pluralism is depicted as a value which is to be respected, not attained or still less maximised.

Critics of UCD interference used the same values in their criticism. When in the early 1980s letters from disgruntled employees started appearing in the specialist press, they complained that RTVE “not being pluralist, is not objective, nor truthful, nor impartial” (Bustamante, 2007, p. 101). Thus, whilst they are both Mediterranean-type media systems, the key regulatory concepts employed in Italian and Spanish broadcasting are importantly different in their emphasis.

The affirmation of objectivity and impartiality preceded its implementation. Government influence on the broadcaster was still present. In part this was a hang-over from the fascist period: one journalist noted that

“the censors continue to operate at Prado del Rey [headquarters of RTVE], so much so that in the last two years the vetoes and the close-downs of programmes have become more frequent... Whilst ‘moral’ censorship has slowed up, political censorship remains strong, perhaps because the current executives hold the same management positions that they did during the sixties and seventies” (quoted in Bustamante, 2007, p. 86).

The emphasis on the role of executives is important, because — in another difference from Rai — the strong government pressure on the broadcaster does not seem to have implied that RTVE was politicised ‘all the way down’. Government interference was largely restricted to overwhelming control of the choice of Director-General and the Director of Information Services; ordinary journalists within the broadcaster were opposed to continued government interference, and made their displeasure clear in letters to the press.

The 1980 statute entrusts the choice of Director-General to the executive, which is to make its choice “having heard the opinion of the Administrative Council”. In reality, numerous Directors-General have been appointed without an opinion from the Administrative Council, in certain cases

because representatives of the governing majority, fearing an adverse vote, abandoned the meeting in order to prevent it from reaching quorum (Bustamante, 2007, p. 100). Equally, whilst the Statute required any government move to dismiss the Director-General to have either the support of the Administrative Council, in practice Director-Generals during this period held office only whilst they enjoyed the government's confidence. The first Director-General to hold office under the 1980 statute, Fernando Castedo, was effectively dismissed by the government following a formal request by the prime minister and the UCD party president on the 23rd October 1981. He had been previously forced to remove his Director of Information Services, Iñaki Gabilondo. Bustamante writes of Castedo that

“it was probably Castedo himself... who ratified these political choices, choosing to sign, even before his nomination, a letter of resignation, leaving all decisions over his mandate to the Government” (Bustamante, 2007, p. 99).

In general, Bustamante argues that the key determinant of RTVE's limited independence of government was the government's power of appointment.

“It is evident that the original sin, the prime cause of the malfunctioning of the office of Director-General, lay in assigning the power to name the Director-General to the government”,

with the consequence that

“post of Director-General assumed such an explicitly political connotation as to characterise, without exception, the corresponding executive group, which was fired at the first opportunity should a particular program be badly managed, or should there be a simple shift in the balance of power within the governing coalition” (Bustamante, 2007, pp. 109, 70).

The Socialists in government

The electoral disaster which befell the UCD in 1982, and the consequent formation of a PSOE government, did not

lead to greater independence for RTVE. Frequent changes of Director-General and, through this appointment, the director of Information Services, continued. Squabbles continued between the broadcaster and the government, occasionally involving questions of principle, such as whether the parties could decide which party members they wished to represent them, and, in extremis, whether they could prevent dissident party members from appearing. These questions of principle were, however, usually answered with detriment to the position of RTVE: the programme *La Clave* invited a dissident socialist to participate in a debate on local government, and the PSOE's displeasure with the decision led to the resignation of the Director of Information Services, José Luis Balbín (Bustamante, 2007, p. 126).

When the government was not pressuring Directors-General, it was choosing them with an eye to their political affiliation. This was certainly the case with Luis Solana, brother of the noted Socialist exponent Javier Solana, who was accused by the opposition of a “lack of impartiality”, particularly during the 1989 elections. So strong was the opposition's rancour that they signed a joint accord to “protect political pluralism and the objectivity of the information broadcast by RTVE”, depositing the accord with the Central Electoral Office (Bustamante, 2007, p. 128).

Indeed, objectivity and, secondarily pluralism, remained the key concepts employed in the debate. When private television was agreed in 1988, the key regulatory concepts which were used by RTVE were ported across to the private broadcasters. That is, the private operators were to be “guided by the same criteria of objectivity and pluralism present in the January 1980 Statute on Radio and Television” (Bustamante, 2007, p. 155).

Equally, greater soft regulation emphasising such values was pursued as a potential solution to the problem of independence. A self-regulatory code was agreed between the Ministry of Education and the television companies in April 1993; this did not prevent a special Senado committee in 1993 calling for a Consejo Audiovisual, similar to that existing at the time in France, to “oversee the pluralism and objectivity of information” (Bustamante, 2007, pp. 136–7).

The emphasis in these proposals upon the key regulatory concept of objectivity was shared by journalists at the time — and in particular, by those younger journalists who had

less experience of the period of transition. Survey results reported by [Canel and Piqué \(1998\)](#) show journalists were typically non-ideological, extremely well-educated, and largely unaffiliated with parties. A “definition of good journalism as avoiding personal ideological preferences from biasing their work [was] quoted by a high rate of the sample, especially among the younger journalists”. Almost all of the sample claimed “to have studied at university level, [with] 87% claiming to major in communications” ([Canel and Piqué, 1998](#)). A majority of respondents did not identify with a party at all.

Although the PSOE governments passed various important laws in other important fields — on regional television, private television, state support for cinema, reform of state support for newspapers and intellectual property law — they did not make any significant reforms to the public broadcaster.⁶⁷ The legislative framework was thus unaltered when the Partido Popular gained power in 1996.

7.3 FROM AZNAR TO ZAPATERO

Despite having strongly criticised the PSOE’s behaviour towards RTVE, the Partido Popular was equally, if not more domineering in its dealings with RTVE. The first sign of its reversal of course with respect to RTVE came when it nominated its first Director-General, Fernando Lopez Amor. Not only was Amor a PP parliamentarian, but his nomination was also communicated to the Administrative Council of RTVE by fax, undermining the legal requirement that the council should have a voice in the nomination. (Although Amor benefitted from this approach in his selection, it was to be to his disadvantage just twenty months later when the government dismissed him whilst abroad, without his knowledge).

Again, the key players in interpreting the wishes of the government were the Director-General and the Director of the Information Services. Of particular note during the later period of PP government is Alfredo Urdaci, who adopted an extremely visible profile — much more similar to the profile enjoyed by directors of the *telegiornali* in Italy — exposing him to severe criticism.

⁶⁷ There was one exception: Radio Cadena Española merged with RNE to form a single public radio service.

Urdaci's profile was hardly helped by a highly significant judgement of the High Court (Audiencia Nacional) in 2003. A trial had been brought by the national trade union which argued that RTVE had deliberately minimized the amount of coverage given to the nation-wide strike it had organized, and furthermore distorted its coverage to imply that the union was less representative than it in fact was. The Court agreed with the claimant, arguing in particular that RTVE had cherry-picked the results of a poll carried out by the *Centro de Investigaciones Sociológicas* (CIS), and finding that RTVE had thereby damaged workers' right to strike (though it stepped back from invoking a judicially evaluable standard of impartiality or truthfulness), and ordering the broadcaster to issue a correction and apology on all its news-services.

The treatment of the national strike of 2000 was just one of a number of high-profile events which were widely judged to have been covered badly or partially, and which led to protests outside and within the broadcaster. The latter led to the formation of a *Consejo provisional de informativos*, which proposed the drafting of an ethical code for broadcast journalists. In the run-up to the 2004 elections, this work intensified, and many of the same journalists involved in the Consejo Provisional formed a *Comité Anti-Manipulación*, chaired by a seven member executive committee (Montano, 2006, p. 182).

Whether these efforts would have eventually led to an increase in the broadcaster's independence, or whether they would have created greater pressure for legislative reform increasing independence, is not known. The most powerful — and certainly the most emotive — factor in producing reform was the attempt by the PP to have RTVE blame Basque terrorists for the explosion in Madrid on the 11th March, the eve of the election. The person in charge of news coverage that day, Urdaci, denied that the PP was involved, yet the perception that it was fuelled the movement for reform of the 1980 Statute.

Whilst opposition parties had promised in the past to reform the broadcaster when in power, such promises had been disregarded. The new government therefore pre-committed itself to the reform path by pledging to accept the recommendations of an independent committee set up to draft a new statute and suggest new legislation. This committee, which included numerous media experts, and

no directly political nominees, produced a report which called for substantive changes to the broadcaster, particularly concerning methods of appointment.

Yet even this pre-commitment was not immune to steps backward. The report proposed that an administrative council of eight members be nominated by a two-thirds majority in each branch of Parliament, with each branch electing its four nominees separately. The duration of their mandate was to be six years, without the possibility of re-election. The Director-General was subsequently to be appointed by the administrative council after a public recruitment exercise. The general structure of the broadcaster would thus have been similar to most European PSBs, with a dual board system.

Yet when the proposals came to be transposed into law, the parliament rejected this proposal, choosing instead to have a single, board with an executive President, chosen by the Parliament. Bustamante notes that whilst this retrograde step was regrettable, “parliamentary election with a strengthened majority nevertheless represents a huge step forward for RTVE’s autonomy compared to previous periods”, though he notes that there is an extremely risky clause which provides for election by simple-majority in the event that no candidate is elected within two months of the nomination of the council as a whole.

7.4 CONCLUSION

Any comprehensive judgement on RTVE must wait until the effects of the Zapatero reform have been demonstrated. Nevertheless, we may place this reform effort in its proper context by briefly repeating the principal steps in this chapter, viz., that

- although the Spanish market for news was not open in any sense, efforts at journalistic education and professionalization were advanced relative to other Mediterranean countries
- second, that because of this, journalists within RTVE have occasionally united to promote efforts aimed at adopting rules for content

- third, that no official efforts at producing rules for content have been made, because of the frequent replacement of directors-general and directors of the news service;
- fourth, that RTVE has consequently been unable to defend itself in the face of political criticism of its output, not just in normal political clashes, but also in front of the court system
- fifth, that the frequent replacement of directors-general has been due to the limited legal protection afforded the broadcaster;
- sixth, that when politicians and academics sought to increase the independence of the broadcaster, it was legal protections against dismissal of the chief executive that they modified

Consequently, although the low levels of independence shown by RTVE are entirely in line with our expectations of a broadcaster in the Polarized-Pluralist/Mediterranean model, these low levels of independence result more from extremely limited legal protection, which is relatively tractable, and result less from the levels of professionalization, which are high compared, for example, to Italy. The prospects for future independence are thus positive.

‘TREADING DELICATELY LIKE AGAG’:
THE BBC

The British Broadcasting Corporation (BBC) is the largest public service broadcaster in the world. By accident of language and dint of graft, it is also the most important and influential. Over eighty years, it has won a deserved reputation for independence. In the statistical analysis of chapter 3, the BBC counted as but one case amongst others; it no more determined the validity of the theory than did the public broadcasters of Slovakia or New Zealand. Yet any theory of PSB independence which does not hold when applied to the BBC will ultimately be unconvincing even if valid.

In this chapter I apply my theory of PSB independence to the BBC. My analysis is divided chronologically into three sections, which cover the period from the company’s founding until the advent of competition, from then until the beginning of the Thatcher government, and from Thatcher until the present day. Within each section I briefly consider the history of the period, including developments in the media market (*.1), the key rhetorical commitments of the BBC (*.2), its concrete rules as they developed (*.3), the structure, organization and recruitment of news staff (*.4), and alleged cases of interference during that period (*.5).

I find that the BBC’s independence has derived from its willingness to develop rules which constrain its output, permitting it both to wrest control from politicians who would enforce much less malleable rules and to defuse potential intervention. This reasoning has been recognized since the BBC’s foundation. Although these rules have not always been popular, they have been politic, and as Reith himself wrote in the *Radio Times* “it is well to be politic and like Agag to tread delicately” (Scannell and Cardiff, 1991, p. 27).

Figure 8.1: BBC timeline

1922	British Broadcasting <i>Company</i> formed	•
1927	British Broadcasting <i>Corporation</i> formed	•
1940	Board of Governors reduced to two (wartime)	•
1946	BBC - Whips Agreement on political coverage	•
1956	Suez crisis	•
1960	Code on Violence written	•
1971	<i>Yesterday's Men</i>	•
1977	Annan Committee; current affairs guidelines	•
1992	John Birt appointed Director-General	•
2000	Greg Dyke appointed Director-General	•
2004	Hutton inquiry concludes	•

8.1 FROM FOUNDATION TO COMPETITION (1922 — 1955)

8.1.1 *The setting*

The market for news in the United Kingdom in the early 20th century was large both in absolute terms and relative to population. For a time, the world's best-selling newspapers were British. The historical reach of the British empire had contributed to the growth of expansive networks of several press agencies, including Reuter's, Press Association, Exchange Telegraph and Central News, all founded prior to the 1880s. There were journalists of note: Charles Dickens was one of their number. Yet British journalists had rejected the professional model of journalism represented by the 1884 founding of the National Association of Journalists (later the Chartered Institute of Journalists), preferring instead to adopt the trade union model with the 1910 establishment of the National Union of Journalists.

As a rich country, the potential market for radio sets was also large. Manufacturers knew this, but needed to make

the purchase of a set attractive. To that end, the six largest British manufacturers of radio receivers formed the British Broadcasting Company in October of 1922. The companies had been encouraged to merge by the Post Office, who much preferred “co-operation to competition” (Briggs, 1995a, pp. 105–6).⁶⁸

John Reith was appointed Managing Director of the new company, and served both the British Broadcasting Company, and its successor the British Broadcasting Corporation (a public corporation chartered under royal warrant), until 1938. He was responsible for the development of the concept of public service broadcasting as it applies in Britain today, and it is difficult to overstate his influence over the BBC’s development. Yet at the time, he had no experience of radio, nor of journalism. It was thus necessary to quickly acquire expertise and set precedent. There were, wrote Reith (1924, p. 100) “no precedents to cite; no stores of wisdom to be tapped; no experienced staff to hand. The iron had to be made hot by the striking, and better so”. Setting values was important, and some were crucial: controversy (valued negatively), impartiality, and expertness.

8.1.2 *Key values*

8.1.2.1 *The avoidance of controversy*

Controversy was both something which was (negatively) valued by the BBC and a rule which it was obliged to follow. Precisely whether this obligation followed from the BBC’s own desire to avoid controversy or whether it was a rule imposed by others is unclear. The Post Office claimed that “a general veto was imposed by the Cabinet *from the beginning of broadcasting* on all subjects of political and religious controversy”.⁶⁹ Had this been the case, the avoidance of such material could hardly have been part of a BBC strategy to tread delicately and thereby win independence. However, the BBC disagreed with this interpretation, arguing that the avoidance of controversial matters was a self-imposed

68 Co-operation also made easier the unified treatment of news, as we shall see below.

69 Booklet BP5, “The Broadcasting of Controversial Matter (Excluding Religious Broadcasts): History and Present Practice”, (November 1942), in BBC WAC file R34/317/2 - POLICY - CONTROVERSIAL BROADCASTING 1929, 1932, 1935, 1942-3, 1957.

limitation. Reith wrote to the Assistant Secretary of the Post Office, FW Phillips, in May 1924, challenging him on this interpretation of events:

“on the question of broadcasting speeches and controversial matters, you say at the beginning that the Post Office had requested us to avoid these speeches. This may be a small point, but I do not remember anything like this having been done; we avoided them of our own volition from the start”⁷⁰

Irrespective of the origin of the rule, the BBC was formally requested to avoid discussing controversial matters in a letter from the Postmaster-General sent on the 11th January 1927. Reith, however, was opposed to a formal ban. His intent was not to broadcast discussion of controversial matters; instead, he intended to substitute an internal rule for an external one. In a 1926 letter, Reith argued that the broadcaster was sufficiently responsible to be allowed to discuss controversial issues, for

“it appears from universal experience that *the broadcaster himself is the most important censor of the form and extent of controversial matter*. . . even where government control is so remote and loose as to be negligible, the self-interest or sense of responsibility of the broadcaster requires that controversy should be prudently and tactfully introduced” (Scannell and Cardiff, 1991, p. 42, emphasis added)

As Scannell and Cardiff dryly note, “this letter succeeded where all previous ones failed”. The Post Office decided in March 1928 that, in “appreciation of the loyal and punctilious manner in which [the Governors] have conformed to the obligations. . . imposed” on them, “the bar upon the broadcast of matters of controversy shall for the present be entirely withdrawn”.⁷¹

Following the withdrawal of the ban, the Corporation implemented its own controls on controversy, discussed below. But non-controversy, as a value to be aimed at and not as a constraint, also expressed itself through the choice of programming in the early years of the Corporation. “The early

⁷⁰ *ibid*, Appendix 2b.

⁷¹ *ibid*.

BBC gave political discussion and analysis a low priority in its main concerns. And correspondingly the politicians left it alone in the other areas where it rapidly built up a national reputation and standing” (Kumar, 1975, p. 71). Even when Reith was writing in a personal capacity, he displayed “a critical absence [of]... any concern with the political role of broadcasting or sense of its importance” (Scannell and Cardiff, 1991, p. 5). Even had the BBC not sought to develop rules to contain controversy, its output might not have attracted attention.

One can exaggerate the ‘avoidance of politics’ argument. Some programmes were challenging, controversial, and concerned with current issues of public policy. One example was *Time to Spare*, a documentary on unemployment, cited in the Commons by one Labour MP in order to demonstrate the paucity of benefits payments. George Daggar claimed that individual stories featured on the program “could be accepted as reliable because they were broadcast by the BBC and hence were free from political theory or bias” (Scannell and Cardiff, 1991, p. 65). The government, naturally, contested the figures given by those featured in the documentary, and Reith was summoned by Prime Minister Ramsay MacDonald and told that the series had to stop. Reith, whilst acknowledging the Government’s residual power to order the BBC not to broadcast any programme, noted that if such an order were given, “he would, at that time in the schedule when the talks should be given, instruct the announcer to declare that the next twenty minutes would be silent because the Government had refused to allow the unemployed to express their views. Macdonald backed off, and the series continued” (Scannell and Cardiff, 1991, p. 66). This was a very high-stakes example of a work-to-rule practice.

8.1.2.2 *Impartiality*

The concept of impartiality first arose in connection with the avoidance of controversy. Reith wrote to the Post Office in late 1924 to

“represent again our desire for permission to handle outstanding controversial subjects, providing we can guarantee absolute impartiality in the act” (Scannell and Cardiff, 1991, p. 27)

and the phrase was repeated at various times in the Corporation's early history. Since the Corporation was initially prevented from gathering and broadcasting its own news (see below), the need for such a regulatory concept was initially limited. The first systematic exegesis of the concept, in a form which could subsequently be cited so as to justify particular decisions, came in 1935, when the General Advisory Council (GAC) was asked, as one of its very first tasks, to formulate a paper on the concept of impartiality and what it entailed. The document — GAC(9) — is noteworthy insofar as it is a relatively sophisticated analysis of the concept at a very early stage in the Corporation's life. At the same time, it is most clear upon what impartiality is not, or what impartiality may not be applied to. Many of these negative injunctions have been repeated at later stages in the Corporation's life. Thus, the first paragraph of the report argues that the BBC's general attitude, *qua* public monopoly, ought to be that of impartiality, "except so far as it is proper that, in a free country, the state itself should interfere with the free expression of opinion - e.g., in the case of actual incitement to rebellion, etc.,". Secondly, impartiality was not to be equated with "expressing or encouraging a 'middle' view between two extremes", which would itself represent a departure from impartiality.

The positive injunctions required by impartiality were limited. By adopting impartiality, the BBC committed itself to the task "of giving adequate attention to all public events in proportion to their real interest and importance" — where real interest and importance were interpreted by the BBC itself. Impartiality also implied constraints on the activity of the staff, who could not "be seen to expressing a view or showing any preference, even for a middle opinion or a compromise". Later on, this ban on expressing opinions on public affairs grew to include all outside appearances where the expression of an opinion "might call the Corporation's impartiality into question".

Before the war the concepts of impartiality and objectivity were often used interchangeably: the same GAC paper spoke of the obligation of impartiality being discharged by the "objective presentation of all the alternative points of view". If a distinction was drawn, it concerned the sphere of application of the concept: as one internal memo from 1957 put it, "the word 'impartiality' is usually applied to the broadcasting of controversial issues. The word 'objectivity' is usually applied to the broadcasting of news, where the

application of the policy of impartiality necessarily takes a somewhat different form".⁷² Gradually, however, the references to objectivity became fewer.

It is important to note that any and all statutory references to impartiality during this period were 'borrowed' from BBC usage. The Ullswater committee, which reported in 1936 — a year after the afore-mentioned GAC paper — employed the concept to define the BBC's obligations in news, viz., to offer "a fair selection of items impartially presented". The term itself did not find its way into statute, but the policy was endorsed by the Government in its "Prescribing Memorandum", attached to the Royal Charter and Agreement, in which the Postmaster-General stated that he

relies upon the Corporation to *carry on its existing* policy of treating controversial subjects with complete impartiality⁷³

The BBC's policy finally found statutory vindication in 1954, where the Act of Parliament that created the independent television companies (ITV) laid an obligation on the same to be 'impartial' in their presentation of news and current affairs.

The link between impartiality and independence was, by that time, clear and readily assented to. Hugh Greene — who, rarely amongst BBC Director-Generals, was on friendly terms with Reith — thought that Reith "saw that impartiality and independence went hand in hand" (Greene, 1969, p. 130). Greene himself stated the connection quite clearly:

"Without true independence, therefore, it is difficult for any broadcaster to maintain the highest standards of truth, accuracy, and impartiality. Conversely, of course, without a reputation for these things — truth, accuracy, and impartiality — it is difficult for any broadcasting organisation to be recognised as truly independent and to be generally trusted" (Greene, 1969, p. 106)

The clearest statement of the link between the adoption of a self-imposed requirement of impartiality, and the independence of the BBC comes from a note of 1957:

⁷² H.S. to D.X.B., 28 January 1957, in connection with Lord Strang's motion, 6th February 1957

⁷³ Ibid., emphasis added.

“1. The policy of impartiality was conceived and initiated by the British Broadcasting Company

2. It was seen as a positive ideal, valued in itself and appropriate to a body based fundamentally on a motive of public service and providing information available to all.

3. It was seen also as an indispensable condition of a necessary advance, on the basis of public confidence, towards the freedom of the broadcasting service to deal independently with news, events and opinion, as to which broadcasting was at the beginning subject to many restrictions. This view proved to be correct. *The present freedom of the broadcasting service results largely from it. None other would have served.*

4. ...

5. The BBC has never been required or directed in any Charter or Licence to observe impartiality.

6. The PMG's references to impartiality in his prescribing memorandum issued to the BBC in terms of Licence 15(4) takes [sic] the form of an endorsement of the BBC's own policy, and a reliance upon it, not of a direction.

7. Charges of bias have been brought against the BBC on innumerable occasions but successive independent committees of inquiry have invariably approved the record. The BBC's basic impartiality has been widely recognised. It has seldom, if ever, been seriously challenged, and never successfully, in Parliament or elsewhere"⁷⁴

8.1.2.3 *Expertness*

'Expertness' was one of Reith's essential requirements for public service broadcasting, as described in his 1924 'manifesto'. Expertness in technical matters was already assured; "the concept of expertness in programme matters took longer to establish... certainly by 1939 a professional ethos was already apparent, though it was by no means universally shared or approved" (Briggs, 1995a, Vol. II, p. 424). However, certain programmes can be identified precisely because they did not demonstrate high 'expertness'.

⁷⁴ Ibid., emphasis added

The example given above of a controversial programme (*Time to Spare*) was unusual because it was more immediate than typical BBC programming. That is, it allowed normal citizens to come to the microphone and express themselves, and it did so in a way which was not mediated by experts who interpreted those expressions.

This was in contrast to the typical BBC talk, often given by speakers drawn from Oxford or Cambridge, whose background gave their talks the disinterested air of expertness. As [Scannell and Cardiff \(1991, p. 166\)](#) note, “the impersonal style became the rule for expert speakers precisely because the BBC wished to avoid the accusation that it allowed them to use radio to promote their personal views”. This impersonal style meant that any expressions of personal opinion — any “I think”s, or “my view is” — had to be excised from the prepared scripts. In this, speakers were ‘aided’ by the talks producers, who, thanks to their knowledge of the special demands of radio, were able to exact changes in speeches on the grounds of ‘what worked best’.

Impersonality was also the hallmark of BBC announcers. With the exception of the period of war, where the ability to recognise a trusted voice was at a premium, all BBC announcers were anonymous. The reason for anonymity was, again, to avoid the impression that the BBC could ever broadcast clashing voices:

“The BBC is one Corporation, and can only be thought of by the listener as individual. It has many voices but one mouth. It can speak in many styles, but the variety is due to the difference of subject matter and must not betray any inconsistency of treatment. It is a commonplace that ‘announcers sound all alike’. That is a tribute to their training” ([Briggs, 1995a](#), vol. II, p. 123)

The commonplace that ‘announcers sound all alike’ should not be taken as implied criticism for, at least according to listener research, the ‘dispassionate style of announcing’ was appreciated by ‘virtually everyone” ([Briggs, 1995a](#), vol. V, p. 71).

8.1.3 *Concrete rules*

In addition to its commitment to expertness and impersonality, the BBC had a series of rules designed to minimize controversy. Three examples will suffice: the creation of a Controversy Committee; the adoption of the '14-day rule', and the development of the Maconachie file. All three rules, or structures, served to constrain output; all three had a tactical use; and all three were abandoned as soon as the threat to the BBC's independence was over.

The Controversy Committee was established following the lifting of the formal prohibition on the discussion of controversial issues. The committee was to meet weekly and issue "recommendations upon the various proposals which were obviously, or likely to prove, controversial in character" (BP5). Whether because checks at lower levels prevented much business from reaching the agenda of the Controversy Committee, or because the need to demonstrate caution to the Government had already passed, the Controversy Committee was eventually abolished twenty months later in late 1929 (BP5). It had, however, served its purpose: by 1929 the nation was more likely to concentrate on the effects of the Great Depression than the selection of speakers on the BBC.

The second rule arrived much later in the BBC's history and was much more consequential. The 'fourteen-day rule' was a commitment by the BBC not to broadcast debate or discussion programmes concerning issues which were to be discussed in either House of Parliament over the coming fortnight. The policy had initially been adopted by the Corporation during war-time⁷⁵, and had been set on a more formal basis when, in 1946, the BBC met with the main political parties in order to reach a written agreement on how to handle political programming. The rule was agreed to in order that Parliament would not be unduly influenced by any discussion outside of Parliament. Both Churchill and Attlee judged it would be "shocking to have debates in this house forestalled, time after time, by expressions of opinion by persons who had not the status or responsibility of MPs" (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. IV, p. 607).

The rule obviously served to constrain output, but by reducing the topicality of discussion programmes, it also reduced

⁷⁵ Minutes of a meeting of Tuesday 24th March 1953, WAC

the risk that politicians would see programmes as partisan merely due to the heat of the moment. Yet by 1953 the rule had begun to chafe, and over the next three years the BBC attempted to revise their initial agreement with the parties.

The BBC's first move in the argument was to assure the parties that if such discussions were to be allowed, they would be handled with the Corporation's customary tact: its representatives argued "that the matter was the responsibility of the BBC, which had a duty to be impartial, and not for the parties"⁷⁶, and that the public (and occasionally members of Parliament who had not been informed by the leaders of their parties who had imposed it) falsely attributed the rule to the BBC, accusing it of timidity. As Asa Briggs has noted, "the BBC was claiming the right for the first time in its history to decide how to present current issues to the public without external constraint" (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. IV, p. 606). When this line of argument was rebuffed, Director-General Ian Jacob tried a more obvious appeal on the basis of internal control:

"A possible solution would be to say to the party leaders that the Corporation recognises the force of the opinions expressed, and in general will proceed so as to avoid the possibility of broadcasts taking place of a character that might swing opinion just before a debate. We will not however subscribe any longer to a written rule on a subject which lies entirely within the responsibility of the Governors. . .

If we can in this way substitute an internal rule, which we can interpret sensibly and freely, for an external agreement which has to be rigidly enforced no matter what the merits of any particular insistence may be, I suggest that we shall have won our point without doing violence to our relations with the Party leaders" ⁷⁷

The Corporation was eventually forced to call the government's bluff, and insist that it would no longer be bound by its agreement with the parties. In response, the Postmaster-General⁷⁸ issued an order, permitted under the Charter, formally enshrining the 14-day rule. This provoked 'furore' on

⁷⁶ *ibid.*

⁷⁷ "The Closed Fortnight", note by the Director-General, 27th May 1953, emphasis added

⁷⁸ Charles Hill, who would subsequently be appointed BBC Chairman (1967 - 1972)

the part of the public and commentariat, with the *Economist* urging the director-general to go to the Tower of London sooner than comply with the rule. Eventually, the enormity of the Suez crisis, and the eventual resignation of Anthony Eden from the premiership, first made the rule untenable and, second, made it politically possible for the government to reverse its course.

I turn finally to the 'Maconachie rules'. Sir Richard Maconachie was appointed Director of Talks in 1935 after having served as a civil servant in India and Afghanistan. His appointment, which came after a period of interregnum, was designed to increase control over the Talks Department, which had been seen as too 'progressive' under its previous head Hilda Matheson. Consequently his appointment was seen with trepidation by many of the staff. Yet over the next ten years, he managed to codify much of what the BBC was doing, and also win over the affection of those who worked for him (Briggs, 1995b, vol. II, p. 149). The result of his labours was the Maconachie file,⁷⁹ a compendium of several papers on different aspects of the BBC's existence, continuously updated until shortly after the end of the war. Although many of the entries in the Maconachie file concern institutional aspects of the BBC and not its output, Maconachie's work meant that the BBC was able to record its decisions on different topics, and thus have a better basis for justifying its decisions to cover those topics in that way.

8.1.4 *News*

8.1.4.1 *The press agencies*

The manufacturing companies who had formed the British Broadcasting Company had asked for permission to broadcast their own news, but had been turned down by the Post Office. Instead, the four main press agencies — Reuters, Press Association, Exchange Telegraph, and Central News — agreed to supply to the BBC a 'daily summary of the world's news', 'solely for the purpose of distribution within the British Isles' between six and eleven in the evening. In return, "the BBC promised that it would make use of this news only in its broadcast programmes, and that BBC news bulletins would always begin with the acknowledgement,

⁷⁹ Now kept as WAC (R34/518) - "POLICY FILE".

‘Copyright News from Reuter, Press Association, Exchange Telegraph & Central News’” (Briggs, 1995a, p. 132). These terms were written in to the Company’s broadcasting licence, issued in January 1923 by the Post Office.

Three principal reasons motivated the Post Office’s decision to prevent the BBC from gathering its own news. The first reason was purely financial: the Post Office derived revenue from the press agencies’ use of telegraph and telegram services. A competitor to the press agencies capable of employing a new technology, wireless telegraphy, from which the Post Office derived no revenue, was thus an indirect threat to Post Office revenue.

A second reason was security. In their negotiations with the Post Office, the press agencies were represented by Roderick Jones, the managing director of Reuters. During the First World War, Reuters had come under suspicion for its links with the German press agency Wolff and its perceived friendliness to the German cause. As a partial result of the outbreak of war, Reuters’ financial results suffered, and other companies had indicated their desire to acquire the company. The government wished to avoid acquisition of Reuters by outside companies (including the Marconi company, which had expressed interest). In a bid to resolve these issues, the Government proposed injecting capital into a refounded Reuters in which the government enjoyed special share-holder rights. Roderick Jones was influential in securing Reuter’s consent to the deal. Reuters could therefore be trusted not to disseminate information prejudicial to national security interests. The same was probably true of the other press agencies, who knew of Reuter’s difficulties, and who knew that the government had stepped in to some degree both to help Reuters and to secure its own interests (Putnis, 2008). In this respect the situation in Britain was similar to that in Sweden with *Tidningarnas Telegrambyrå*.

A third reason, however, was the need for impartiality. The Post Office was aware of the potential political influence of broadcasting, particularly with a monopoly provider of radio news. Consequently, the Post Office needed to “concern itself with the question of relations between the BBC and the press” and, “by insisting that the BBC should secure its news from news agencies. . . [secure] ‘some sort of assurance that the news was of the general type of uncoloured news’” (Briggs, 1995a, Vol. I, p. 168).

The press agencies also made a similar argument. Jones argued that the BBC should not only be prevented from collecting news, it should also be prevented from arranging news, lest amateur or (still worse!) partisan opinion manifest itself in this arrangement:

“News values must always be to some extent a matter of opinion. But it is better to have trained, expert and dispassionate opinion rather than the reverse, and this is secured by the agreement of the News Agencies, endorsed by the newspapers and the Post Office, to work together as far as broadcasting is concerned” (Briggs, 1995a, Vol. I, p. 172)

Thus the restrictions on the licence granted to the BBC reflected the desire of the government in part to constrain the broadcaster, and prevent it from offering partisan output.

8.1.4.2 *Own news*

From 1927 onwards, the BBC was permitted to broadcast a limited number of eye-witness descriptions, provided that they did not obscure the press agencies' work. The BBC's News Department, however, was only founded in 1934 under the leadership of John Coatman, a professor of Imperial Economics at LSE. Coatman's intent was fully in line with the BBC's aspirations: he “made it abundantly clear to all the newcomers to the News Department that his intention was to create a service on new professional lines which would be responsible through the chief news editor to [Alan] Dawnay [Controller of Programmes]” (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. II, p. 156). In order to establish such a service, however, Coatman was obliged to borrow from existing experience accumulated by the press agencies and by the newspapers.

RULES The press agencies helped by providing rules on content which were subsequently employed by the BBC's own editors. “One of the very first letters from Arthur Burrows, Director of Programmes in London, to the Broadcasting Editor of Reuters, established some general principles, and an embryo definition for broadcast news, which subsequently were consolidated as guidelines for BBC News for many years” (Scannell and Cardiff, 1991, p. 106). With

the formation of the news department, the general principles which had served in the assembly of Reuters- and PA-provided news also helped in the formation of own-sourced news. By the nineteen-fifties, there were three sources of potential guidance: “Standing Instructions for Duty Editors and Chief Sub-editors”; “Standing Instructions for Sub-editors”, and the News Department’s “Guidance Index”. These documents were not paper tigers: when, in the fifties, DH Clarke attempted to compile the first BBC’s Producers’ Guidelines, a regional executive replied rather sniffily that although his region

“has never prepared and issued a privately printed policy book as has apparently been done by certain of the large London establishments. . . I would not like you to think that staff are not informed of Corporation policy. Here we keep a private policy file made up of various instructions. . . All newly joining members of the staff are informed of this file and are particularly asked to look through it and make any necessary notes at the earliest possible moment they can after joining us”⁸⁰

Whilst the press agencies contributed to the development of rules for news, the newspapers contributed by furnishing a reference model for the BBC’s output and by providing the journalists necessary to implement it. The BBC’s reference model was always the quality press, and indeed the comparison was explicitly used by the BBC, as well as invoked by others. In its evidence to the Beveridge report, the BBC argued that its own news values “probably came closest to those used by the Daily Telegraph” . Similarly, [Scannell and Cardiff \(1991, p. 112\)](#) have argued that the role of BBC news was to be a “popular and nationwide analogue of the Times”. In one respect at least the BBC followed this paper’s lead: [West \(1987, pp. 40-41\)](#) claims that the BBC defused complaints about its parliamentary service

by analysing the number of minutes given to each contribution [which] was then compared with the number of column inches given to the same speakers in the reports in the Times. Even over a brief period the comparison showed that

⁸⁰ Undated 1958 letter from H. Casey to DH Clarke, BBC WAC file “R34/612 - POLICY: PROGRAMME POLICY BOOK - 1945-1963”.

the BBC had been as unprejudiced as the press; what more could be asked of it than that?, was then the query raised”.

Even if it begged the question of whether the press was unprejudiced in absolute terms, the Corporation was able to defend itself by invoking this example.

RECRUITMENT When the example of the press was not explicitly invoked, its values spread to the Corporation through recruitment of journalists from the quality newspapers. Two newspapers known for their separation of fact and comment — the *Manchester Guardian* (as it was then) and the *Daily Telegraph* — provided the mainstay of the BBC’s journalistic staff. When the BBC’s own news desk was formed in 1935 under John Coatman, the *Guardian* supplied both the domestic and foreign news editors, RT Clark and Kenneth Adam; that paper also supplied the domestic editor some years later, Patrick Ryan. The *Telegraph* supplied one future director-general (Hugh Greene, who joined the BBC in 1940), and one future Editor of News (Donald Edwards, who joined the BBC in 1940).

There were no major recruitments from the *Times*, perhaps because the BBC at this early point in its history was not a sufficiently attractive option for job-seekers: before Reith was appointed Managing Director of the Company, the position had reputedly been offered to one ‘prominent journalist’ who had turned the job down Briggs (1995b, Vol. I, p. 137). The *Times*, however, did vindicate the Corporation’s choice of journalists, choosing Patrick Ryan as its assistant editor and William Haley, the BBC’s director-general between 1943 and 1952, as its editor. The newspaper also helped in less obvious ways, such as advising on possible candidates “with a good knowledge of politics and public affairs, coupled with a non-partisan outlook” (Scannell and Cardiff, 1991, p. 113).

ORGANIZATION These recruits were organised on fairly rigid lines. Whether by design or by accident, News was governed by a succession of autocratic Department heads, who espoused puritanical views about the future direction of the service. Coatman was the first of this type; he was followed eventually by heavy-handed control of a different type during the war, with the government closely involved

in the production of news bulletins. Jean Seaton argues that this was responsible for a change in the outlook of the BBC journalist:

With unhealthy links with the Foreign Office and the civil service... “journalists stopped being passionate advocates and saw themselves rather as independent professionals, and their writing as a negotiated product of conflict between partisan views... politics was an activity which only happened between major political parties”

Yet even if the experience of war reinforced the image of the journalist as an independent professional, the BBC had already selected for this trait before the war. What the war-time experience certainly did was accustom journalists to the experience of strong hierarchy which could rule certain expressions as out-of-bounds.

Strong hierarchy in News continued after the war with the appointment of Tahu Hole as head of News. Hole — a New Zealand journalist who had joined the BBC in 1943 — was loathed by the majority of his subordinates. Miall (1994, p. 125) thought that he had been promoted into a post that was “well beyond his capabilities”:

“BBC News at that time was respected throughout the world. Hole thought he could maintain that reputation by following a line of extreme caution. Insecure, and uncertain in his news judgement, he ran the News Division on a policy of safety first. There must never be a mistake, no matter how slow and pedestrian the news bulletins were, and all items broadcast must be supported by at least two sources”

Hole’s policy had a stultifying effect on BBC News. This was made obvious when ITV’s television news appeared. The effect was disastrous for staff morale and retention. Hole’s policy was, however, important in establishing the unity of BBC news. “[Hole] believed strongly not only in ‘objectivity’, but in consistency: the BBC’s news services must not speak with different voices” (Briggs, 1995b, vol. IV, p. 577). Hole’s News department served all of the BBC, even after the post-war reorganisation of the existing channels into the Home, Light, and Third Programmes. While

within the structure the 'individuality' of each programme was emphasized, all three programmes would draw on three 'supply divisions' - Entertainment... Talks... News" (Briggs, 1995a, vol. IV, p. 78). This News department itself would become more unified, as the existing news units — spread out throughout London due to space constraints — were concentrated in Egton House (Briggs, 1995b, vol. IV, p. 575): one editorial meeting at 11am set the BBC's news agenda for the day. Although there were differences in the selection of news between domestic and foreign services, the 'theory' behind all BBC News — in the Regions as in Egton House and in Bush House — was that "in all versions the basic facts must remain the same"; and indeed the BBC boasted as much to the Beveridge report on broadcasting. (Briggs, 1995b, vol. IV, p. 577).

The unity pursued by Hole did have some defenders. "There was an 'old guard' that shared [Hole's] outlook" (Briggs, 1995b, vol. V, p. 68), and the service did get recognition from the Director-General, Ian Jacob, as a 'central service' with a 'special quality', which justified its placement directly beneath the Director-General (Briggs, 1995b, vol. IV, p. 578). Undoubtedly, such recognition would have come about anyway after the war with the massively increased appetite for news from the public. Yet observers did seem to rate the service passably. NBC claimed that the BBC's television *Newsreel* was 'strikingly consistent in its excellence' (Briggs, 1995b, vol. V, p. 69), though perhaps greater emphasis should be laid on 'consistency' rather than 'excellence' - Sveriges Radio director-general Olof Rydbeck, upon visiting the BBC, found its news service distinctly unappealing, with the same news on each channel. 'Consistency' did insulate the BBC from criticism: Asa Briggs reports that when the General Affairs Council decided to discuss the issue of news in 1949, the resulting debate was slight. "Sir George Gater said he had tried to collect criticisms of the news service but had failed to find any" (Briggs, 1995b, vol. IV, p. 578).

8.1.5 *Political interference during this period*

There are two main cases of interference in the BBC's news output which bookend this period: the BBC's handling of the General Strike of 1926, and its treatment of the Suez crisis.

The General Strike came at an awkward time for the BBC. The Crawford committee had, to Reith's satisfaction, recommended that the Company be transformed into a Corporation established by Royal Charter; yet the government had not yet acted upon this recommendation at the time the strike began; the threat of non-renewal of the Company's licence was thus ever-present. Since the General Strike also affected newspapers, the BBC was the sole source of news for many citizens, or at least those who did not read either of the two partisan newspapers, the *British Worker*, produced by the Trades Union Congress, or the *British Gazette*, produced by the government and edited by Winston Churchill.

The government was split on its approach to this newly-relevant medium. One wing, led by Churchill, wished to take over the BBC and turn it into an instrument of propaganda much as the *British Gazette* was. Another wing, led by Leslie Hoare, thought that "it would be wiser to leave the BBC a measure of independence or at least of 'semi-independence'" (Briggs, 1995b, vol. I, p. 361). Whether independence was valued intrinsically or whether the government thought it had a tactical value, the Prime Minister, Baldwin, was inclined to follow this second group.

The BBC and Reith were aware of this threat. They responded by treading a narrow line between preserving impartiality and supporting the government. Reith, in a note to the Prime Minister, wrote that the BBC "must maintain with discretion its essential news service... [and preserve its] reputation for sincerity and impartiality [but] would emphasise and initiate statements likely to counteract a spirit of selfishness and hostility" (Reith, 1949, p. 109). In news, editors were instructed to include statements from trade union leaders if they were known to be true; outside of news, the BBC strayed ever further into editorializing.

Thus, the BBC neither broadcast falsehood, nor censored true news from uncomfortable quarters; and yet, Reith himself admitted that it did not display 'complete impartiality', but that this could hardly be expected in the situation (Reith, 1949, p. 112). Preserving a "tradition of accuracy and fair play" (Reith, 1949, p. 112) did matter: the BBC's output was sharply differentiated from that of the government-run *British Gazette* (Briggs, 1995b, vol. I, p. 362).

Interestingly, the reaction from the Labour party — which would return to power on its own only in 1945 — was not

hostile to the BBC, even though it was clear from its output that it thought the TUC should end its strike sooner rather than later. Reith met with Charles Trevelyan and William Graham from the Labour party, neither of whom seemed upset. "Reith wrote to both Graham and MacDonald... explaining how his hands had been tied during the strike and hoping they would not attribute BBC actions entirely to him. What he had been able to do, he said, was to make news bulletins as authentic and reliable as they could have been in the circumstances and to include a considerable amount of TUC news" (Briggs, 1995*b*, vol. I, p. 377). It was only gradually afterwards, when newspapers began to circulate again, that listeners re-evaluated the BBC's news output unfavourably, leading some to dub it the BFC, or 'British Falsehood Corporation'. These viewers were not, of course, in a position to sanction the Corporation, which had effectively avoided sanctioning or external compromising of its independence by tilting its output to favour the party in power.

The heart of the Suez controversy concerned the right of the government to request broadcasts to the nation, and the right of the opposition to request a response. Under the 1947 aide-memoire between the parties and the BBC, the government had the right to request a broadcast to the nation, but the BBC had the right to grant, upon request, a rebuttal from the opposition party if the government's broadcast was considered partisan. When British troops invaded Egypt in 1956, the Prime Minister, Anthony Eden, broadcast to the nation; but the Labour party, under Hugh Gaitskell, requested a response. Gaitskell's response — and the BBC's initial refusal to let visiting Australian Prime Minister Robert Menzies to broadcast a response to the response — infuriated Eden. Eden and his advisers drew up a list of options for sanctioning the BBC, including a cut in funding for the World Service — which in the meantime had continued to broadcast the full range of British opinion on Suez to the Arab world. In the end, the World Service's increase in direct funding was a derisory one, far less than the BBC deemed urgently necessary, but still far from a sanction (Briggs, p. 135).

Although the crisis was a serious one, the BBC escaped relatively unharmed. The government attacked the weakest part of the BBC, that part which relied on direct funding. The intention behind cutting funds to the World Service was made clear: this was a punitive action. 'Contrary views'

had been broadcast to the world, ‘to the confusion of people in certain parts of the world’, who did ‘not understand our political system’ (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. IV, p. 124). The government attempted to link this to domestic output (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. IV, p. 121), but a sanction applied to the whole of the BBC via funding would have been much more difficult.

The BBC’s response was at times fairly calm because it believed its rules would defend it. Director of Spoken Word Harman Grisewood “had left his post [to go into hospital] confident that whatever course events took in the Middle East... there was no cause for alarm that he could foresee ‘from the standpoint of the BBC’. ‘The programmes which would deal with these events were well manned and the system of control was by now in good order. Relations with Parliament were better and closer than they had been’”. For Briggs (1995b, Vol. IV, p. 85), Grisewood “was over confident about the values of his Rules, or at least about the willingness of politicians to follow them in periods of crisis”. Yet Grisewood was right in one respect: Eden had no problems with the ministerial broadcasts and the opposition’s right to reply, both of which were covered by the rules. “Clark [press adviser to Eden] had been told before Eden broadcast that if Gaitskell were to request a right to reply, the Board would probably concede it, and he acknowledged that this was understood, was indeed expected, by the PM” (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. IV, p. 97). What Eden did object to was the subsequent coverage of Gaitskell’s speech in the World Service: Clark, on Eden’s behalf, asked that “too much prominence should not be given in that Service to describing domestic opposition to the PM’s policy” (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. IV, pp. 99–100).

Sticking close to impartiality was also useful for the other broadcaster at the time — the network of independent television companies set up by the Television Act 1954. During the conflict, Eden asked Sir Kenneth Clark, Chairman of the Independent Television Authority “into No 10 for a talk. Could not Clark slant the news about Suez? was the question. Clark replied that had he been inclined to do so - and he was not - he would not have been able to do it. ‘We were working under an Act of Parliament which called for impartiality’” (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. IV, p. 109). Thus, the ITA was able to defend itself by citing its conformity with a rule which had previously been accepted by politicians.

8.2 THE YEARS OF BUTSKELLISM (1954 — 1979)

8.2.1 *The setting*

The period beginning with the Suez crisis and the ending with the appointment of Margaret Thatcher as Prime Minister is often viewed as a time of political consensus: these were the years of 'Butskellism' — the *Economist's* portmanteau term to indicate the similar Keynesian economic policies of Chancellors Rab Butler (Conservative) and Hugh Gaitskell (Labour). They were also years of active interest in politics, and of a high demand for news. With the BBC relatively secure after the government's failure to sanction it over Suez, the Corporation's news offer expanded to meet greater demand. It was joined by its competitors, the new Independent Television (ITV) companies, introduced by the 1954 Television Act. In this context, the BBC's key value — for internal as well as external consumption — was the value of professionalism, which to some extent absorbed the previous requirements of impartiality and expertness, since an impartial presentation was a professional one. This commitment to professionalism, however, did breed concern amongst politicians that broadcasts journalists, though they might not be partisan, might be heavily critical of politicians and condescending towards them. The BBC was able to develop more rules — rules which prevented employees from political activity, which covered content in news and current affairs and in drama, and which introduced proper complaints procedures — which mitigated these concerns. News operated within the context of these rules and of increasing two-way traffic in personnel with ITV. What complaints there were were motivated more by perceived condescension rather than perceived partisanship.

8.2.2 *Key values: professionalism*

During the fifties BBC staff came to see themselves as 'professionals'. This is one of the principal claims of Tom Burn's (1977) book on the BBC, *Public Institution and Private World*. Burns dated the emergence of a 'professional ethos' to the early fifties, at precisely the time the BBC began its first training courses. From the nineteen fifties onwards the proportion of BBC broadcasters who had come to the BBC

from the press decreased as the numbers of BBC-recruited and trained broadcasters increased. This increased investment in training was, in one sense, a natural consequence of the BBC's considerable growth during and since the war. In another sense, it was a competitive necessity: the independent television companies had started operating in the mid-nineteen fifties, and needed experienced programme staff. Many of those trained in the fifties became leading figures in the BBC, particularly those on the BBC's Graduate Trainee Scheme, introduced in 1954. Other more specific training courses also ran: David Attenborough (future Controller of Programmes) was an early graduate of the BBC's first television training course. Training was also included for secretaries, "who played the major part in linking the formal and informal structures of the BBC" (Briggs, 1995*b*, vol. V, p. 383).

More important than the empirical claim about the use of this term is Burns' analysis of the way this term became used to evaluate and thereby moderate or encourage/discourage conduct within the broadcaster. Bluntly: everything good was professional, everything bad was unprofessional. Consequently, talk of impartiality was subsumed under professionalism. Impartiality was good, and therefore professional; and what was professional was therefore impartial. Professionalism "was used in relation both to news broadcasting and to light entertainment. It was also applied to both producers and performers" (Briggs, 1995*b*, vol. V, p. 24). BBC employees (ab)used this term for the same reasons discussed in chapter 1 — to assert that one is a member of a 'profession' is to assert a claim that one uses specialised and/or technical knowledge in one's job. That specialised knowledge can then be employed to subdue or disarm criticism.

The advance and conquest of the professionalization project within the BBC is more remarkable when set against traditional skepticism towards the concept of professionalization in British journalism. Delano (2002, pp. 136-137) has more recently found that only a bare majority of journalists would describe what they do as a profession, with others preferring to describe it as a 'trade', 'craft', or 'vocation' — although broadcast journalists are more likely to describe it as a profession.

Burns, in truth, regards impartiality not as something which was subsumed under professionalism, but as something

separate. The connection between professionalism, impartiality, and thereby independence is made much clearer by Krishnan Kumar (1975), in an argument in part based on his own experience as a BBC producer. Kumar makes two separate arguments. First, he argues that the technical demands of broadcasting led to the accretion of power around the producer and the consequent subtraction of power from the politician who appears on television. Despite the

“general power of the technical apparatus of the broadcasting organization, to which the professional broadcaster is directly and at every moment linked. . . [h]e is in any case relaxed and at home in the often very complex and bewildering environment of the studio, an environment in which even regular contributors can easily lose their way and become the prisoners of technical constraints. . . *the requirement of professional orchestration can seem so over-riding as to submerge the contributors and their contribution under the general onward flow of the programme, as directed by a virtuoso presenter*”

Upon arriving at the studio, the politician to be interviewed is thus placed under pressure; consequently, any infelicities of expression that he or she may commit cannot be so easily blamed on the broadcaster or partisan animus, but merely on his or her own lack of knowledge or familiarity with the technical requirements of broadcasting.

Second, Kumar argues that the BBC during this period adopted a new ‘survival strategy’ involving “the careful selection and promotion of a small group of professional broadcasters-announcers, news-readers, presenters” (Kumar, 1975, p. 67). This survival strategy was needed because the BBC’s previous survival strategy — the use of anonymous presenters — was no longer viable on television, and because of greater politicization of previously uncontroversial issues. The reasons behind the BBC’s original preference for anonymity were clear: what is personal may be idiosyncratic; one idiosyncrasy may be attitude towards political issues or personalities; these attitudes may manifest themselves in the presentation of news or current affairs; such manifestation damages our claim to provide news which would not be more favourable to a particular party if the current presenter or broadcaster were replaced by another. And indeed, if the attitudes of presenters were

very idiosyncratic or out in tune with the BBC's ethos, the selection and promotion of this group would indeed risk the BBC's independence. Yet, these presenters "have been selected and promoted precisely because they have shown the capacity to internalize the BBC's dilemmas and problems, and to resolve them in some sense by the style and manner of their presentation" (Kumar, 1975, p. 81). Their capacity to do so allows the BBC to use as presenters even those who, like Day and Kennedy, have previously been politically active.

This survival strategy is not a purely negative one, for

it is this context of professional presentation that allows the BBC to exhibit a range of contributors that is far wider than its critics usually acknowledge. The problem, strictly speaking, of whether or not a particular individual should be allowed to appear on the air is not one that exercises the BBC to the extent often thought. Most sorts of opinions and attitudes get some sort of hearing. Everyone from the most extreme Marxist group to the most extreme right-wing group will at some time or the other have appeared. . . if you challenge the higher management of the BBC on the grounds of unfair neglect or omission of particular groups and opinions, any one of them will smoothly run you off a list of people and groups that have appeared. . . The important point, of course, is that such individuals and groups are almost never allowed to appear on their own. Their views are refracted through the prism of technical and professional presentation, shaped subtly, and sometimes far from subtly, by the professionally defined canons of balance, lively but controlled debating, and licensed controversy" (Kumar, 1975, p. 75).

Kumar was writing at the end of the seventies, but the phenomenon he observes dates back at least to the fifties. In particular, the establishment of ITV as a competing broadcaster was partly helpful for the BBC's professionalization project, since "there was a profession in common" (Born, 2005, ch. 1). ITV was able to more daring in the recruitment of political journalists, and thus provided a proving ground for journalists who might not have initially found favour with the BBC. Robin Day and Ludovic Kennedy, for

example, were both recruited from ITN; both had stood as candidates in the 1959 General Election, both for the Liberal Party. Leonard Miall had been aware of their work, and, when they were forced to resign from ITN in order to contest the election, phoned them and asked if they would be interested in working for the BBC's new *Panorama* programme should they not be elected to Parliament.

The professionalization project was also boosted by the BBC's director-general during much of the intervening period, Hugh Greene, who was well aware of necessity of professionalising as a path to independence. Greene had worked as the director of Nordwest Deutsche Radio (NWDR) during the Allied occupation; in discussing the broadcaster, he notes "the need, in the interest of the political parties, to get their spokesmen to accept some training in broadcasting" even before moving on to discuss "the functioning of the new NWDR training school and all sorts of other things including the personnel policy of NWDR" (Greene, 1969, p. 49). The point here is not to suggest that Greene gave training broadcasters secondary importance — on the contrary, Greene was entirely supportive of the professionalization project: "We are all professionals", he stated in a speech in New York (Greene, 1969, p. 65-66). Rather, it is to note that offering training to politicians is, in itself, a claim to superior knowledge of how politicians can best present their argument in a particular medium; and that this claim is itself important in understanding relationships between the two.

The price of professionalization was the acceptance of certain rules which constrained employee's actions, particularly in relation to political activity. Greene was forced to explain this point to European broadcasters who were considering or who employed systems of *proporz* or *lottizzazione*:

"We have a strict rule that neither outside candidates nor staff members considered for any post may be questioned as to their political views or party political allegiance. Although I am the director-general, there is no reason why anyone should know how I cast my vote at the last general election, and it would never occur to anyone to ask. And the same is true of the whole of our staff. Sweeping statements are sometimes made to the effect that our whole

staff inclines too much to the Left or too much to the Right. Statements of this kind are not heard from responsible quarters, and we can afford to ignore them" (Greene, 1969, p. 80).

A similar statement was made a decade later, in a lecture on 'Editorial Responsibilities', by one BBC editor:

"I cannot recall having made, in the 21 years I have worked for the BBC, a single overtly political statement in public. . . most BBC journalists are equally careful" (Taylor, 1975)

This orientation to politics was preserved not only by informal rules of politesse, but by formal rules on staff member's political engagements. Such rules applied to the BBC at all levels - the BBC Governors, for example have a standing agreement not to speak on broadcasting issues without informing one another, and those Governors who also sit in the Lords are prevented by custom from speaking on broadcasting due to the Lords' Addison rules.⁸¹

An example of the seriousness and thoroughness with which the BBC applied these rules on political activity can be found in local Bristol politics. One BBC reporter for BBC Bristol had attended a protest meeting outside an electoral meeting for the National Front, for which action he received a warning. The story appeared in the Bristol newspapers, and Tony Benn — at the time the member of Parliament for the area — wrote to the BBC to complain and register his 'absolute shock'. Michael Swann, replying for the BBC, defended the action:

"this [participation] must damage his credibility as an impartial BBC producer not only in the minds of listeners... but in any negotiations that he may have to conduct with the National Front or, for that matter, with any other political party... nor can I accept [the] excuse that because Mr. Dunne was only protesting against racism, we had no right to warn him. . . this was a pre-election meeting which totally alters the situation. . . We have every intention of maintaining our constitutional corporate neutrality in such matters"

⁸¹ "Companion to the Standing Orders and guide to the Proceedings of the House of Lords", §§4.83 — 4.85.

If the BBC was minded to defend this rule even when doing so implied respectability for a virulently racist party which at the time was polling less than 0.75% nation-wide, it seems that the rule was fairly entrenched.

The consequence of these rules was that politicians were often unable to ascertain whether journalists were partisan or not — or if they did believe that journalists were partisan, they were often wrong. The case of Grace Wyndham Goldie is illustrative in this regard. Goldie started off as a radio talks producer, and became a leading figure in television current affairs and electoral coverage. As Miall (1994, p. 138) puts it, “Grace’s own political instincts were conservative. [Her husband] used to work part-time for the Conservative Central Office, and she was a close friend of Earl Woolton, the chairman of the Tory party”; and yet Anthony Eden thought she was a ‘well-known socialist’, and those she chose for her programmes were typically “right-wing socialists”.

8.2.3 *Concrete rules*

These personnel rules went alongside the development of written and codified rules concerning content. The tendency during this period was for existing BBC policy, found in a myriad of notes collected in reference works such as the Maconachie file, to be collected, edited and published in slim volumes that could both be circulated internally to journalists and producers, on the expectation that they might read the whole document, and also externally, to politicians, in the hope that they might refer to it or be impressed by it. One aspect of the development of these rules is the creation of a formal BBC complaints handling procedure, which pre-empted criticism of the BBC’s dismissive attitude towards politics (see pp. 211—216). An earlier example of the use of rules to assuage political (and popular) criticism is the BBC’s development of codes on the presentation of violence. The BBC’s “Code of Practice on the Use of Violence in Television Programmes” was originally drawn up in 1960 by Kenneth Adams, then Controller of Programmes (Television), partly in response to Hilde Himmelweit’s research on the effect of television on children. The initial development of the code does not seem to have stemmed from any cases of political or popular criticism, but rather

as an independent initiative: the codes were, however, periodically reiterated when criticism resurfaced, as it did towards the end of the 1960s when more violent depictions of criminality began to appear on screens.

The Code was thus recirculated in 1965, with additional notes on the portrayal of sex and blasphemy, with the following comment:

“The reason I am doing this is because, as you can see from the Press, the anti-BBC hounds are baying these days even more shrilly than before... I think we must avoid as much as possible anything which will needlessly “rock the boat”. In short, we must guard against any thoughtless or inadvertent mistakes. So, read on and commit to heart”⁸²

Five years later, the issue resurfaced again, with Home Secretary James Callaghan promising ill-defined action on the issue. In response to this pressure, the BBC created an advisory group (“Advisory Group on the Social Effects of Television”) to look at the issue, and consider possible revisions of the Code of Practice. The terms of reference of this group were set so as to maximise the external value of the announcement and minimise the internal imposition: in a Board of Management meeting of April 1970, there was

further consideration... given to the possible powers and functions of the proposed body to consider violence on television. DG [Director-General] stressed that the BBC’s proposals *must be effective enough to get the Home Secretary “off the hook”*, but, considered from a political angle, *should be no more than enough to relieve the BBC from the possible imposition of an external supervisory body*. The BBC and the ITA were agreed in opposition to any kind of external ‘Viewers’ Council’⁸³

Even the former author of the code, Kenneth Adam, was by this time somewhat jaded with the cynical use of the code: in an article for the Evening News on the 28th April 1970, he wrote that

82 WAC R78/1,217/1 “Violence in Programmes — General” (1960-69).

83 “WAC R78/1,218/1 Violence in Programmes, General - Part 2, Jan. 1970 —”, emphasis added

"The last thing I want to do is jump on Jim Callaghan's bandwagon. But if he is worried about the new violence of our native TV product then I am with him all the way. Four series... are currently driving a coach and horses through the codes of violence. I have a right to interpret the BBC's rules because I set them up ten years ago, and *they are still on the book, to be smugly trotted out on inquiry from earnest American researchers...* Neither [code] is perfect, by any means, but both are understandable and workable... producers are flaunting their intention, and managers are turning a cynical eye on standards to which they are officially committed up to the hilt"⁸⁴

To earnest American researchers one might well add members of Parliament — a further revision of the code in 1978 was circulated to a list of sixty-two MPs. The same was also done for the BBC's nascent code on News and Current Affairs — and it is to news that I now turn.

8.2.4 News

Recognition of the special role News played within the BBC came in 1949, with Director-General Ian Jacob's speech of that year to the News Division. Jacob recognised that many other BBC employees looked upon news with some distrust, but justified the 'special nature' of the service. According to Harman Grisewood, the Director of Spoken Word (thus ultimately responsible for news broadcasting), "the BBC had followed no 'news policy' before Jacob's direct intervention". If Grisewood meant that there were no policies *in* news, he contradicts himself, for he noted that "a mass of tradition - has grown up around news and the BBC's handling of news" (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. V., p. 65). We must therefore understand that the BBC, until that time, had no policy *for* news — no views about how large or important a part of the BBC's output it should be, and how it should relate to the rest of the organization.

Policies in news did exist, and, as with policies on violence, they were regularly trotted out upon receipt of foreign enquiries. In response to a request from Radiotjänst concerning the reporting of court cases, the BBC was able to

⁸⁴ *ibid.*, emphasis added

enclose “a copy of the Guidance Index, which is kept up to date from time to time for the use of our News Room”, though the BBC’s liaison officer did not that it was unlikely to be of “great interest since the Guidance notes are mainly applicable to our situation here in the UK”.⁸⁵

The Guidance Index was primarily for internal use. It was superseded by the BBC’s guidelines of news and current affairs, which from the outset were designed to be quoted and read outside of the broadcaster. Work on guidelines in news and current affairs began in spring of 1979, alongside the development of revised codes on the portrayal of violence. MPs were kept informed of these developments, and a circular, which included a “detailed statement on news and current affairs future plans on BBC1 and 2, and [the] Sims Report [on violence] with associated revised guidelines”, was sent to 62 MPs in that same year.

8.2.5 *Political interference*

The BBC’s main problems of this period, however, did not concern violence, nor news and current affairs in its purest form. Rather, the BBC was attacked for displaying a lack of respect for politics. Two programmes were emblematic: *That Was The Week That Was* (TW3), a comic revue, and *Yesterday’s Men*, a documentary on the activities of Labour leaders after the party’s defeat in the 1970 general election. Politicians’ negative response to both programmes fed proposals to ‘democratize’ the BBC — to change its institutional structure so as to afford it less legal protection. The BBC’s response to this was typical: it promised to set up new structures which would either provide new rules on content, or better adjudicate existing rules.

That Was The Week That Was (TW3), which began in 1962, was an example of a programme which was both cynical towards politicians and a major ratings success. Its cynicism was mild by today’s standards, yet it implied that politicians lied, were grasping, and/or out of touch. Reaction to TW3 from politicians was, understandably, typically negative, but it was rarely sufficiently concentrated, and rarely concentrated amongst those who could cause any strong

⁸⁵ Letter from JMG Best to Anne-Marie Hellerström, 16th September 1960. BBC WAC E1/2388/2 - Sveriges Radio 1960.

official reaction. Macmillan was sanguine about the programme: better to be laughed at than ignored, he said. He wrote to his Postmaster-General, Reginald Bevins, explicitly telling him not to take any action against the programme (Briggs, 1995b, vol. V, p. 360).

The programme makers justified this approach by claiming to be 'on the side of the audience' (Briggs, 1995b, vol. V, p. 360), in rhetorical contraposition to the 'Establishment'. Of course, during a period of Conservative government, "to be anti-Establishment... meant being anti-Conservative" (Briggs, 1995b, vol. V, p. 360). After Greene had heard from 'Westminster circles' that that the programme "was wearing thin", the programme was put on hiatus for the summer, but with the promise that it would return. Eventually, Greene "came to the conclusion that it was 'in the general interest' and 'in the interests of the BBC' that TW3 'should not go on'... It had now become, he complained 'a gigantic red herring, diverting attention from the real achievements of the BBC and prejudicing judgement of broadcasts on important but difficult social themes'... While he realized that there would be protests over what would be seen as BBC cowardice, there were 'political considerations' that most people would find convincing. A general election could not be far away" (Briggs, 1995b, vol. V, p. 372).

TW3 allowed the BBC to push boundaries; it did not exceed them. Paradoxically the more damaging programme was a straight documentary which, however, retained the cynical attitude which had developed during the sixties. *Yesterday's Men* was a 1971 documentary which followed a number of former Labour cabinet ministers as they went about their post-ministerial lives. The most controversial part of the documentary was an interview with former Prime Minister Harold Wilson in which Wilson was asked about the amount of money he had received for his memoirs, and whether he had thus profited from his access to state papers in writing them. Wilson's press adviser (Joe Haines) thought that he had secured an agreement with the interview team that questions pertaining to the memoirs would not be included, but, somewhat predictably, interpretations about the scope of this agreement differed. The programme's final tenor was unfortunate: the title had not been disclosed to interviewees, who found it insulting.

Yesterday's Men fed one school of criticism of the BBC, viz., that it was contributing to a deterioration in public confi-

dence in politics by making programmes which started from the presumption that politicians were concealing something and/or acted from base motives; in such a context, the task of the programme-maker or interviewer was thus to unmask the politician's lie and produce a gotcha moment. This in itself was not a violation of impartiality or indication of any bias (though the effect may have been harder on government politicians), and so it was initially difficult to reconcile complaints of this manner to the traditional manner of complaint handling. This school of criticism included Labour ministers who might otherwise have been thought to be friends of the BBC, such as Dick Crossman:

“Time and time we [Hill, Curran, Crossman] came back to the problem of bias and whether I thought the BBC was biased against the government. I said I didn't, but that I thought great trouble was caused by the instructions that staff were given. I reminded him of the time when the supposedly impartial Chairman of my roundtable discussion on trivialization popped in an absolutely unexpected question at the end and joining in the attack. I also emphasised the difference between BBC and ITN interviewers. The ITN people just come to get your news and to get you to put it over objectively in your own way. The BBC comes to argue with you, to keep something in reserve and then pounce on you, and this makes you wary of them and produces a worse broadcast” (Crossman, 1977, p. 912).

Crossman had been due to give a speech on the relationship between the press and politics, “showing that there is one member of the Government who understands the problems of the press, radio and TV, is sympathetic about them, and is expounding fairly objectively the problems of co-operation between the Government and the TV authorities” (Crossman, 1977, p. 229). Unfortunately, Crossman's analysis was rather pre-empted by a much less sympathetic critic of the BBC, Tony Benn.

Benn — who had worked briefly for the BBC, and who thought it “wildly right wing” (Briggs, 1995b, vol. V, p. 518) — had given a speech to around thirty members of his constituency in which he declared that broadcasting was “really too important to be left to the broadcasters” (Briggs, 1995b, Vol. V, p. 787). Benn's views were shared

by much of the left of the Labour party at this time, and an impressive roster of academic opinion in the '76 group ("a pressure group composed mainly of programme makers and academics": Freedman, 2001, p. 196) and the Standing Committee on Broadcasting (SCoB), another mainly academic group. The call for greater 'democratization' of broadcasting was to be met by abolishing the BBC and IBA and creating of a Public Broadcasting Commission supervised by a Communications Council (Freedman, 2001, p. 202).

Whilst a concern about broadcaster-led erosion of trust in politics could easily be shared by those across the political spectrum, the demand for democratization of the media was more partisan. In part, it derived from suspicion that the BBC treated Labour poorly, probably due to Labour's being in government, since government initiatives are always scrutinized more carefully. In part, though, it derived from dissatisfaction with particular areas which were difficult to portray concisely and fairly. One of these was industrial relations. Some years later the *Glasgow University Media Group (1976, 1980)* would show that the BBC was both more likely to feature employers than employees in industrial disputes, and also to ignore the root causes of the industrial dispute. This diagnosis would have been favourably received by the left of the Labour party, which sought "for broadcasting [not] to be at the service of profit and bureaucracy, but to be at the service of our Movement and the people as a whole" (trade unionist Alan Sapper, quoted in Freedman, 2001, p. 202).

Wilson did not share Benn's policy proposals, but did share his suspicion of the BBC. He thought Radio 1 disc-jockeys "brought in news items with an anti-Labour slant". Dick Crossman thought Wilson's attitude to be "absolutely lunatic" and his "outstanding weakness as a leader" (Crossman, 1977, p. 388). Yet Wilson, as Prime Minister, was able to act on such feelings whilst Crossman was not. In 1970 he announced to Cabinet that there would be an inquiry into the BBC, with Lord (Noel) Annan as Chair. Crossman derided the move as "another instance of a major decision being privately taken by Harold and a few others" (Crossman, 1977, p. 921).

The inquiry would not take place — at least, not that year. In the election of June 1970, Labour lost office, thus setting the stage for *Yesterday's Men*. Although the BBC would

go through the usual steps — internal report partially exonerating the Corporation but acknowledging that some misunderstandings had arisen — there was a sense in which the Governors — because of their own involvement in the process — could no longer arbitrate at the interface between politics and the BBC. “The notion of seeking redress solely from the BBC Governors. . . no longer commanded public support” (Starks, 1981, p. 469). This, equally, was a key element in the Annan report when it was brought back to life by the Wilson government which returned to power in 1974.

The formation of a new complaints handling mechanism and revised rules on current affairs would partially assuage critics. The first move, which followed directly from the farrago over *Yesterday’s Men*, was the establishment of a complaints commission:

“[Board chairman Charles Hill] who genuinely liked asking questions, now asked himself whose duty it was to protect those who believed that they had been unfairly treated by the BBC. The Governors had vetted the programme and some had seen it. . . The upshot was the setting up in October 1971 of a BBC Programmes Complaints Commission, which issued its first report in May 1973. Lord Parker, a former Lord Chief Justice, was its first Chairman, and the other two members were Lord Maybray-King, a former Speaker of the House of Commons, and Sir Edmund Compton [former Parliamentary ombudsman] (Briggs, 1995a, p. 900).

The establishment of the commission subsequently became a pre-emptive defence in the BBC’s evidence to the Annan committee, where it claimed “that the case for a Complaints Commission was said to have already been recognised” (Starks, 1981, p. 470), and that the committee’s proposal for an independent complaints commission for both broadcasters was not necessary.

Greater editorial control was also implemented. Jean Seaton has written that “one benefit [of *Yesterday’s Men*] was the emergence of new guidelines” (Seaton, 1997, p. 88). Whilst the Annan committee was taking evidence,

The BBC set up advisory bodies on the Social Effects of Television and on Industrial and

Business Affairs. The two authorities have updated and jointly published their codes on the portrayal of violence; guidelines to policy and practice in the News and Current Affairs field have been codified and made public; and public meetings have blossomed. . . *These moves reduced the pressure for new structures of public control*" (Starks, 1981, p. 471)

8.3 FROM THATCHER TO BLAIR (1979 — 2005)

British politics changed after 1979. The advent of Thatcherism brought the end of easy alternation between different flavours of Keynesianism, and the beginning of conviction politics — a type of politics that survived the Conservative party's fall from power in 1997 and the beginning of a period of electoral dominance for the Labour party under Tony Blair. This period also saw particularly marked conflict between the BBC and the government during each period of party rule: conflict between 1984 and 1986, culminating in the sacking of Director-General Alasdair Milne; and conflict between 2003 and 2004, ending with the resignation of Greg Dyke and Gavyn Davies, director-general and Chairman of the Board of Governors respectively. Following each episode, the BBC attempted to rebuild its independence from government by toughening its rules on content. This development was particularly associated with the period in office of John Birt, memorably described by playwright Dennis Potter as a "croak-voiced Dalek", but nonetheless a manager whose policies pre-empted attacks from both Labour and Conservative governments.

Given the importance of periods of conflict since 1979, this section is structured slightly differently in three parts, dealing with the BBC under Alasdair Milne (8.3.1), the restoration of the BBC under John Birt (8.3.2), and the Hutton affair (8.3.3). My analysis — insofar as it credits Birt with restoring the BBC's position, is not novel, but nor is it uncontroversial: the debate between Birtists and anti-Birtists is a virulent one. The analysis of the Hutton inquiry is perhaps more unusual: I argue that prior to the death of David Kelly, and the subsequent appointment of a judicial investigation, the BBC had successfully bogged down in the government in a series of increasingly sterile exchanges

about when the BBC was and was not allowed to use single-sourced stories. Consequently, had David Kelly not died, and had no other extra-ordinary event occurred to widen the conflict, relations between the government and the BBC would likely have ended in stalemate, and the BBC would probably have retained its Director-General and Chairman.

8.3.1 *Milne*

The Thatcher era began auspiciously for the BBC. The Conservative party did not feel poorly treated by the Corporation; and most of the criticism launched at the Corporation both on the structural level (with the Annan report) and on the programme level (with controversies over single incidents such as *Yesterday's Men* or the allegedly pro-business coverage of industrial affairs) came from the left of the Labour party. The director-general, Ian Trethowan (1977-1982), was widely suspected amongst BBC staff to be a Conservative, though there was no official confirmation of this (nor could there be) (Wyatt, 2003, p. 16). Given, on one hand, "widespread distrust" amongst all political parties towards the BBC towards the end of the seventies, and, on the other hand, "alleged contempt for the whole parliamentary process" on the part of BBC staff, Trethowan had been "careful to build bridges between the BBC and the Government" (O'Malley, 1994, p. 3). Whether due to this strategy or not, the BBC was fortunate enough to secure the first multi-year licence fee settlement, particularly important in a period where inflation rapidly exhausted the real value of fees with fixed face value.

The fee increase was granted by Willie Whitelaw, Home Secretary, who had always been friendly to the Corporation. One BBC producer dated the decline in Government-BBC relations to Whitelaw's move from the Home Office in 1983; up until that point — and the contemporaneous row over *Maggie's Militant Tendency* — none of the major Government-BBC crises, including Suez and TW3, "had much long-term effect on the BBC" (John Grist, quoted in Seaton and Hennessy, 1997, p. 116). Certainly, those Governors who were appointed by Whitelaw were not overly critical of the Corporation, nor were they as a rule Conservative. Those who were appointed later, by contrast, tended to be much more critical, and much more likely to view faults with the BBC's management.

Faults, however, were present. In particular, under Alasdair Milne [Director-General 1982 — 1986] relationships between the Director-General and the Board of Governors broke down, and the flow of information to the Director-General from programme-making units deteriorated. Why should this have occurred is not quite clear: most commentators place the blame on Milne's personality: whilst ferociously intelligent, Milne was perhaps too socially maladroit to be a good Director-General, or had too limited an appreciation for how others might misunderstand issues, programmes, or policies (O'Malley, 1994, p. 146).

An internal report in 1985 was thus able to conclude that the governors felt "inadequately informed and insufficiently forewarned" (O'Malley, 1994, p. 46). O'Malley (1994, p. 138) concludes that "there is no doubt that the relationship between the BBC Board of Governors and its senior managers deteriorated seriously in the years 1982—6". Milne, in his defence, argued that the Governors had grown too powerful and too involved in day-to-day decision-making: if they felt ill-informed about certain matters, it was because they had no right to involve themselves in those matters (Horrie and Clarke, 1994, p. 208). Milne was perhaps too courteous to add what O'Malley (1994, p. 138) went on to claim:

"the deterioration was a result of the range of policies pursued at government level against the BBC [including placing] on the BBC Board of Governors people deemed to be politically acceptable to Mrs Thatcher, breaking with the convention of bipartisan appointments"

Chapter 4 has shown that appointments were not party-political; those board members who were party-political and close to the Conservatives felt inhibited by their affiliation (as Brian Wenham put it (in O'Malley, 1994, p. 138), "a sizeable faction of the board wanted rid of Milne and his chief editorial associates but could not bring themselves to strike. So they merely wounded, damagingly for the BBC, whose wounds were then further exposed to the turning of the Tory knife"); and party-political board members close to Labour ultimately came to share their colleagues concerns.

The deterioration therefore seems to have been at least partly motivated, and more specifically motivated by a general breakdown in referral procedures which meant that

the Governors were often uninformed because Milne was often unaware. In part, this was structural. Before Milne, there had been a director of news and current affairs who had ultimate authority, but Milne rejected this arrangement; responsibility for news and current affairs was now given to the different networks (Barnett *et al.*, 1994, p. 74). This structural arrangement meant that Alan Protheroe, who acted as Milne's 'flak-catcher', was outside of the production system and thus was forever playing catch-up, unable to monitor and/or intervene at early stages of programme development. A number of commentators concur in concluding that Protheroe "was not sufficiently plugged in" (Barnett *et al.*, 1994, p. 73; Horrie and Clarke, 1994, p. 14; Leapman, 1986, p. 292). In addition to his structurally weak position, Protheroe was by this time nearing the end of his career and reportedly worn-out by repeated Conservative attacks aimed at 'softening-up' the BBC in preparation for the election. The Governors subsequently expressed no confidence in his work when he had retransmitted a TV-AM interview with Princess Margaret without attribution and covering over TV-AM's on-screen ident (Barnett *et al.*, 1994, p. 25).

The Governors felt insufficiently informed about three cases in particular: *Maggie's Militant Tendency* (1984), *Real Lives* (1985), and *Secret Society* (1986). The first of these was a documentary in which it was alleged that members of the Conservative party⁸⁶ had links with neo-Nazi organizations, and which led to a libel trial; the second, part of a series featuring Northern Irish politicians, one of whom (Martin McGuinness) was alleged to be part of the IRA; and the third was a documentary made by BBC Scotland which revealed the existence of the Zircon spy satellite. This last documentary was banned by Milne on national security grounds, but the film-maker subsequently organised screenings of the film which made it a *cause célèbre*.

Maggie's Militant Tendency had been "meticulously checked and rechecked" and approved by the BBC's political and legal advisers. Milne had gone through the issues with the Board led by Stuart Young; however, the libel trial that resulted from the broadcast only arrived in court after Young's resignation and the subsequent appointment of Duke Hussey as Chair and Joel Barnett as deputy. The libel

⁸⁶ Including Neil Hamilton MP, later found guilty of perjury in an unrelated court case.

trial became more difficult for the BBC as it seemed more and more witnesses had been pressured by the Conservative party; the Board — or more accurately, Barnett — forced Milne to settle out of court at the most damaging moment possible, viz., after the two Conservative MPs' lawyers had given their opening statements savaging the BBC (Horrie and Clarke, 1994, pp. 58–59). The collapse of the case led to an Early Day Motion calling for Milne's resignation signed by 100 Conservative MPs.

Real Lives was "cleared by BBC management using its special vetting procedures for programmes on Ireland" (O'Malley, 1994, p. 57). Home Secretary Leon Brittan asked the Board of Governors to ban the programme; they agreed whilst Milne was on a boating holiday in Sweden (Horrie and Clarke, 1994, p. 47). The decision provoked the first-ever strike of BBC journalists.

Secret Society was, of the three, the only instance in which management was clearly unaware of the true political import of a BBC programme. "Protheroe was alerted late", write Horrie and Clarke (1994, p. 94).

"[Protheroe] was worried that information about the satellite might break the Official Secrets Act. He took his concerns to a regular meeting of the D-Notice Committee, the self-regulatory body set up by the Ministry of Defence to prevent journalists inadvertently printing military secrets. Protheroe did not mention Zircon during the meeting, but asked the committee's chairman, Clive Whitmore, if he could stay behind for a little chat... At the mention of the word Zircon, Whitmore's jaw dropped. 'Oh my God!', he yelped. He locked the door. Protheroe spent an hour telling him about the proposed programme. Whitmore listened intently before saying: 'Alan, you are really on dodgy ground here. Very difficult ground indeed'"

Indeed, Protheroe "believed Zircon, along with *Real Lives* and *Maggie's Militant Tendency*, was one of the reasons [the Board] had demanded Milne's head" (Horrie and Clarke, 1994, p. 95). Milne's decision to ban the programme was taken in December 1986; he was dismissed in January of the following year.

The (perceived) failure of editorial control can be seen in the Board's interviews for Milne's successor. Those candidates which supported the merger of news and current affairs into "a single journalistic unit" — Michael Checkland, deputy director general since 1985 and Michael Grade — were received favourably by the Governors; those who were opposed — Brian Wenham — were not (Horrie and Clarke, 1994, pp. 74–75).

8.3.2 *Birt*

It was not, however, to be Checkland, the winning candidate, who would be responsible for merging news and current affairs and restoring the government's confidence in the BBC's editorial control, but rather the man who Checkland was obliged to choose as his deputy, John Birt. Birt was at the time programme controller at LWT. He was known for having distinct views on news and current affairs and for developing the bureaucratic structures necessary to implement those views.

The influence of the printed press on the BBC had been slight from the time of the Beveridge committee onwards; yet under Birt it enjoyed a modest resurgence; for Birt's views on journalism were shared by a circle of journalists close to the *Financial Times*. Whilst the *Times* and the *Telegraph* could still be cited in the fifties and sixties as examples of "uncoloured news", their position had changed by the eighties as their coverage became more subject to the whims of Rupert Murdoch (1981 onwards) and Conrad Black (*Telegraph* owner from 1985). The *Financial Times*, however, continued to provide non-partisan, analytic journalism, shorn of trivia — for Birt's critics, hardly mass-market enough to provide a model for the BBC. Birt, however, persisted: he admired John Lloyd, the *Financial Times*' journalist, who would much later publish a book with arguments which overlapped with those of Birt (Lloyd, 2005), and later appointed Ian Hargreaves, FT correspondent, as the managing editor of the (merged) News and Current Affairs section.

Birt's preferences were long-standing. Whilst at LWT, Birt had co-authored with Peter Jay a series of articles for the *Times* arguing that television had a "bias against understanding": since television news privileged events which

could be captured on film, it omitted causes which could not; consequently, in order to counteract this bias, news and current affairs had to be given a "mission to explain". Concretely, each piece was to have a finding, or a thesis: footage and raw material would then be collected to elucidate this analysis, instead of vice-versa.

This approach to news was criticised on its merits (since believed to lead to sterile journalism) and also occasioned *ad hominem* attacks: "'Birtism', a set of idiosyncratic theories about television journalism Birt had been working on since the 1970s. . . [has been explained] as an endlessly flexible doctrine that amounts to whatever will further the career of John Birt" (Horrie and Clarke, 1994, p. xiv), or straightforward "political subordination" (Born, 2005).

Yet Birt was not just an 'ideas man': he also had great use for structures. Birt had previously established a 'substantial bureaucratic structure' at LWT for a programme, *Nice Time*, in order to pursue safely(!) the youth-orientated anarchy the show's producers wanted (Horrie and Clarke, 1994, p. 88). The Birt-implemented merger of news and current affairs was one element of a new bureaucratic structure which suited Birt's ends. A further element was the development of new written codes for news and current affairs. It was during this period that the first collected edition of the BBC Producers' Guidelines was assembled. The original publication in 1987 was followed by several subsequent editions, before being renamed as the BBC Editorial Guidelines in 2005.

The initial development of the guidelines was not welcomed by many within the Corporation. "Everyone thought this was the most sinister thing that had ever happened"⁸⁷. Staff had equally negative views about other changes affecting news and current affairs. Yet Birt's system of editorial control may only have appeared so intrusive because previous systems had been forgotten. Horrie and Clarke (1994, p. 166) write that Birt felt sure that

"with his referral procedure in place he would be in a position to prevent or tone down anything too provocative before it reached the screen"

Yet, of course, the referral procedure was not Birt's invention, and any suggestion that it was must surely indicate

⁸⁷ Interview with Wyatt

that referral prior to Birt had fallen into disuse. Certainly, it was far from the situation depicted by Huw Wheldon when, in a mid-seventies lecture, he noted that “the wrath of the Corporation in its varied human manifestations... is particularly reserved for those who fail to refer” (quoted in [Burns, 1977](#), p. 195).

The imposition of the new guidelines and organizational changes was justified by repeated reference to impartiality, which “was what individual journalists chose to make of it in the mid-eighties”.⁸⁸ Yet within one to three years, writers and producers came to accept the Guidelines as authoritative. They did so because “they began to see that the guidelines were protection for them, not control”.⁸⁹

If Birt succeeded (ultimately) in placating staff, he also managed to placate the government of the time; certainly if the intent of the reforms was to reassure the government that the BBC’s editorial control was adequate, they succeeded. Certain members of the government thought they had already noticed an improvement in the BBC’s output after Milne’s departure ([O’Malley, 1994](#), p. 156); Thatcher concurred:

“The appointment of Duke Hussey as Chairman of the BBC in 1986 and later of John Birt as Deputy Director-General represented an improvement in every respect. When I met Duke Hussey and Joel Barnett - his deputy - in September 1988 I told them how much I supported the new approach being taken” ([Thatcher, 1993](#), p. 637).

8.3.3 *Dyke, Gilligan, Kelly and Hutton*

Birt left the BBC in 2000, and shortly afterwards was appointed a special adviser to Tony Blair. Birt was replaced by Greg Dyke, a television executive who had, in the past, made public his support for the Labour party. Some within the Corporation thought that this made him ineligible for the post, lest the BBC seem too close to the government of the day ([Wyatt, 2003](#), p. 20–21). Dyke’s eventual fate is thus ironic. In the spring of 2003, the BBC came under strong

⁸⁸ Interview with Patricia Hodgson.

⁸⁹ *ibid.*

private pressure from the Labour government over its coverage of the war in Iraq. Government pressure became highly public and controversial following a broadcast on the *Today* programme by reporter Andrew Gilligan, which alleged that the government probably knew that certain parts of its original case for war were wrong, and that the dossier making the case for war had been 'sexed up' by Downing Street. David Kelly, the source for Gilligan's story, was eventually named; he subsequently committed suicide on the 17th July 2003. The government asked Lord Hutton to carry out an inquiry into the circumstances surrounding Dr. Kelly's death. Hutton's report largely exonerated the government, but criticised the BBC's editorial system ("defective"), management ("at fault... in failing to investigate properly the Government's complaints"), and Governors ("should have made more detailed investigations") (Hutton, 2004, pp. 213-4). Following the Hutton Report, BBC Chair Gavyn Davies stepped down, and Director-General Greg Dyke was forced to resign.

The incident is often depicted as proof that the BBC is less independent from government than it would like to believe. I would argue that the government was able to achieve its desired objective — the resignation of Dyke and Davies and the consequent re-evaluation of the BBC's journalism — only because the Hutton enquiry intervened. Prior to the enquiry, and Lord Hutton's interpretation of the BBC's journalism (which most commentators have described as overly exacting) the BBC's natural defence of citing its own guidelines had dragged different members of the government into a futile debate about the exact meaning of those guidelines.

The BBC's guidelines were frequently cited in government letters to the BBC from the very beginning of the government's tussle with the BBC. Gerald Kaufman, Labour MP and then Chair of the Commons Select Committee on Culture, Media and Sport, wrote privately to Gavyn Davies concerning "violations of the BBC's war guidelines"⁹⁰ on the day after combat operations began in Iraq. The BBC's written procedure aided the BBC in its initial stage of confrontation with the government. Publicly available correspondence from the BBC repeatedly cited the Producers' Guidelines; government correspondence subsequently focused on narrower areas of disagreement with the BBC —

90 Evidence submitted to the Hutton Inquiry, BBC/4/0144.

in particular, the Gilligan broadcast's use of an anonymous single source, and was drawn into debating the finer points of its case. There are two points to be made about the use of the Producers' Guidelines. First, the Producers' Guidelines were employed as a valuable resource in the BBC's public campaign against government interference. Between March and May, when the BBC's relations with the government were fraught but remained private, there was little mention of the guidelines, either by Alastair Campbell or Richard Sambrook. Only after the Gilligan broadcast was much mention made of them. Alastair Campbell cites them in letters of the 6th and 26th, making essentially the same criticisms; Richard Sambrook, dealing with the same parts of the Producers' Guidelines, makes essentially the same responses in letters of the 11th and 27th. It is important to note that the correspondence of the 26th - 27th was made publicly available by both sides. Similarly, subsequent correspondence between Ben Bradshaw, Richard Sambrook, and Stephen Whittle, was made public, with the BBC making the first move, on 29th June and 1st July.

Second, the effect of concentration on the Producers' Guidelines was systematically to narrow the range of disagreement between BBC and government. Until the publication of a report by the Commons Foreign Affairs Committee on the 7th, Alastair Campbell had maintained both that the BBC's general coverage of the war was biased and that Gilligan's 06.07 broadcast was false; the former charge was withdrawn. On the specific issue of the Gilligan broadcast, Campbell and Bradshaw had initially argued about the appropriateness of Gilligan's use of a single source, given that the Producers' Guidelines counsel against doing so; but by 1st July Bradshaw, employing the form of words used in the Producers' Guidelines, is writing to ask Whittle whether procedure followed by the Today team "shows any reluctance on behalf of the BBC to rely on one source".⁹¹ The issue is narrowed further: given that reluctance to rely on a single source might be shown by BBC efforts to contact the MoD prior to broadcast of the allegations, the key issue is redefined by Bradshaw and Geoff Hoon as whether the specifics of Gilligan's broadcast were adequately discussed on the evening of the 27th with the MoD press office.⁹²

⁹¹ BBC/5/0172

⁹² Hoon: CAB/1/0408; Bradshaw: BBC/5/0170

Former BBC correspondent and current MP for Exeter Ben Bradshaw became involved in the tussle. Bradshaw had been a BBC reporter and presenter between 1986 and 1997, featuring on *World At One* and *World this Weekend*, both for Radio 4.⁹³ He appeared on the *Today* programme on the 28th to make the government's case. Bradshaw used his experience of the BBC to attempt to shame the BBC into admitting its mistakes:

“the BBC guidelines are very clear, when I worked for the BBC we were taught not to report something without three reliable sources, I know the World Service has and still has higher standards than the domestic service, but the allegation...

“I know from talking to people in the BBC John [Humphreys, *Today* presenter], and I'm sure you do too, that there are many, many senior journalists in the BBC who are deeply unhappy at the way the BBC has handled this”

Humphreys was skeptical of the reasons for Bradshaw's appearance:

“John Humphreys: Ben Bradshaw, Minister of State now at the Department of the Environment, good morning to you. . . And of course formerly of this programme, a journalist yourself.

BB: That's right.

JH: Is that why you were put up to do this interview?”⁹⁴

The same tactic of using insider knowledge to try and shame the BBC into admitting it has not followed procedure was used by another former BBC employee-turned-MP, Chris Bryant, who wrote to Gavyn Davies “as a former head of European Affairs at the BBC” to ask whether each Governor believes the BBC's allegations to be true or false.⁹⁵ Those inside the BBC were concerned that Bradshaw's attempts might succeed. Editor of *Today* Kevin Marsh emailed Mark Damazer about the need to present a single front about the evidence used in the *Today* broadcast to stop “what Bradshaw tried to do last week - and run BBC v. BBC

93 (Dod's Parliamentary Companion, 2006)

94 BBC/6/082

95 BBC/14/0127

red herring”,⁹⁶ or the argument that Bradshaw has the ear of the disaffected within the BBC.

It is impossible to know how relations between the BBC and government would have continued had David Kelly not died. However, the internal BBC correspondence released by the Hutton inquiry gives no indication that the BBC was ready to back down; and it was unlikely that the government would have chosen to escalate the situation: Alastair Campbell had already had to scale back his involvement in the incident after a disastrous interview on Channel 4 News: given the general low esteem with which Campbell was held by the general public, his further involvement in the government’s fight with the BBC threatened to damage the government’s case by association; in general the public perceived the BBC more favourably than the government (YouGov, 2004).

8.4 CONCLUSION

Just as individuals, organizations can display virtues, and the BBC is known for displaying the virtue of independence vis-à-vis the government. This perception is enhanced by the BBC’s willingness to dispense advice to other broadcasters in democratising countries. Even in established democracies, the BBC is often held up as an example of the virtuous broadcaster. In Italy, acts of interference within Rai, or acts of perceived censorship by the broadcaster, are often either dismissed or explained away by invoking the familiar formula, “*non è la BBC*” (it’s not the BBC).

Yet there is a tendency to think that since the BBC displays this virtue, it will be virtuous in all aspects of its existence — that it, as an organization, will demonstrate the unity of the virtues. Yet this is clearly not the case: as this chapter has shown, the management of the BBC regularly acts in an over-bearing manner to impose structures on its own journalists that perhaps in other countries would be viewed as contrary to free expression or overly censorious. Journalists accept these impositions ultimately because they know that they provide protection: if assurances can be given that a journalist has followed the Editorial Guidelines, then they

96 BBC/5/068

will be defended by management against political interference — even when, in the case of Andrew Gilligan, such assurances were dubious.

Although incidents like the Gilligan-Kelly-Hutton affair call into question the degree of the BBC's independence, we should not let this overshadow the realization that the BBC is among the more independent PSBs in this study — certainly more independent than the Spanish or Italian broadcasters, and likely more independent than Danmarks Radio. That this independence should have been called into question recently is unsurprising given the dramatic tail-off in the size of the market for news in the UK. The BBC has been forced to work harder at maintaining its distinct news culture, and avoid the danger noted by the Governors of “mov[ing] in line with tabloid and Sunday newspaper journalism where contacting people who might deny a story were avoided”, where the culture is one of “creating rather than reporting news”.⁹⁷ That hard work, however, is reflected in the body of rules concerning content, not just as currently exemplified by the Editorial Guidelines, but throughout the BBC's history.

These rules can be expressed as a function of the initial state of the market for news in Britain. To summarize this chapter in line with the theory presented in this thesis, I have shown that

- that the market for news in Britain was large, especially when considered in absolute terms
- second, that his market permitted four competing news agencies, all of which lobbied furiously to limit the BBC's independent news-gathering ability
- Consequently, the BBC was forced to rely on these companies, and sought their advice even when this was not necessary
- third, thanks to policy imported from such agencies, and to an independent drive on the part of long-tenured BBC executives like Reith and Richard Maconachie, the BBC developed extensive codes governing output, and strong public commitments to impartiality
- fourth, that these commitments have been repeatedly cited by the BBC itself as the bulwark of its impartiality

⁹⁷ Minutes of the Board meeting of the 6th July 2003, BBC/6/100

- fifth, codes implementing these commitments – particularly developed as far as politics was concerned – are revised and distributed to politicians when the need arises (as, for example, in the seventies), pre-empting the concerns of politicians,
- sixth, that when these codes are followed, and when their adequacy is a matter only for politicians and journalists, the BBC can deal with concerns; where communication breaks down (Milne) or where BBC codes are held to be quasi-judicial, the BBC loses out, and its independence vis-a-vis government is diminished.

RADIO TELEFÍS ÉIREANN

In the previous chapter, I demonstrated certain patterns in the BBC's history which were connected to the pursuit, attainment, and defence of its independence. These patterns were rooted in the development of the market for news in Britain, which is one of the features which distinguishes different models of the media. To the extent that the UK and the Republic of Ireland have similar media systems, we can employ Ireland as a check on our theory: to extent that the theoretically-derived patterns found in the history of the BBC are also found in the history of Irish public broadcasting, our theory is strengthened; to the extent that they are not found, or do not work in the expected direction, our theory is weakened.

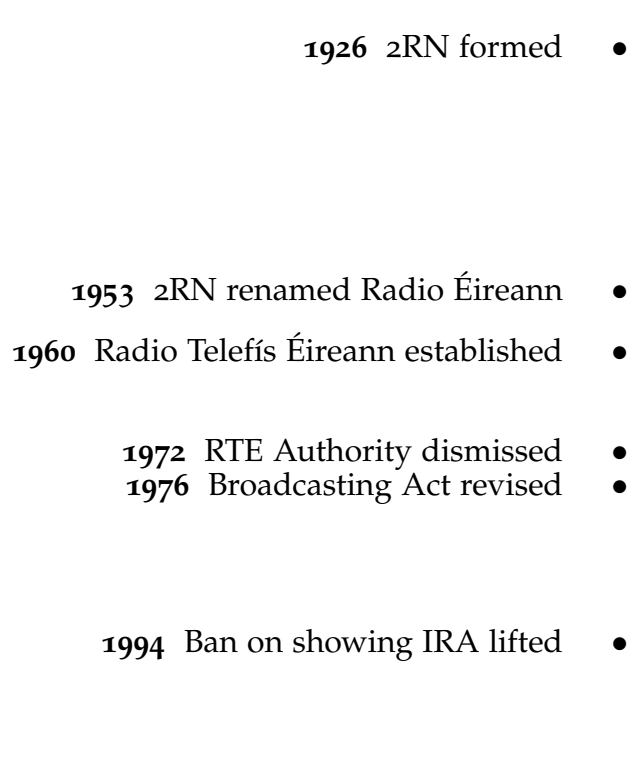
Despite numerous other mooted comparisons⁹⁸, comparison of the UK and Irish experiences is warranted for a number of reasons. First, as [Pine \(2002, p. xii\)](#) notes,

“up to 1922, Ireland and Britain shared a legal and administrative structure, and therefore in the mid-1920s the evolution of radio in each country, however different their societies may have been, followed cognate paths”

Second, Ireland benefitted from its proximity to a much larger media market, which had a positive influence on the professionalization of journalism. The first Irish association of journalists was a local chapter of the British National Union of Journalists (NUJ) ([Horgan, 2002, p. 53](#)); Irish journalists continue to be represented by the NUJ. Irish journalists were cognisant of the requirements of British journalism, since many of them had to produce it: many

⁹⁸ For Finland, see [Pine \(2002, pp. xii-xiii\)](#); for France, [McLoone \(1991, p. 13\)](#); Italy is also a possible comparison.

Figure 9.1: RTÉ timeline



of the *editors* of Irish dailies moonlighted as Dublin correspondents for the major British newspapers (Horgan, 2002, p. 38). London-based journalists who returned to Ireland were able to stand up to the parties even in party-owned newspapers (Horgan, 2002, p. 37). And, as we shall see, ideas and personnel imported from Britain played a key role in the development of what was then called 2RN and later known as Radio Éireann.

9.1 FROM 2RN TO TELEVISION (1926 — 1960)

The first broadcasting organization in the Irish Free State was “2RN”, a broadcaster based in the Ministry of Posts and Telegraphs which began operating in January of 1926 after permission from the Ministry of Finance arrived in June of the preceding year (Pine, 2002, p. 114). The Ministry of Finance’s approval was necessary because of the (erroneous) belief that the broadcaster — funded by licence fees and by import duties on radio receivers — would be a drain on the

Exchequer. (In fact, 2RN made more than £331,567 for the Exchequer between 1926 and 1936: [Pine, 2002](#), p. 136).

The choice to establish the broadcaster as a unit within the Ministry was anomalous. Indeed, it had been opposed by the then-Postmaster General, J.J. Walsh, who noted that the “only other country in the world which was tempted to choose the path of total state control was Russia” ([Horgan, 2002](#), p. 17). Walsh’s White Paper had envisaged an Irish Broadcasting Company built on similar lines to the British Broadcasting Company, with an exclusive concession from the State to supply broadcasting services. The proposal, however, was not accepted, as scandal engulfed one of the proposed concessionaires, attacked as being an “agent of British interests in Ireland” ([Savage, 1996](#), p. 3). Against the objections of the Finance Ministry, 2Rn was established as a state organ.

Despite the failure to imitate the form of the BBC, 2RN drew heavily on British experience. The BBC Director-General John Reith sat on the station’s first interview board; BBC representatives were also involved when the first Station Director, Séamus Clandillon, was chosen and approved by the Minister ([Pine, 2002](#), pp. 138–9). Clandillon was subsequently sent to the BBC to “acclimatise” to radio ([Pine, 2002](#), p. 70). The BBC also supplied 2RN with much of its news. “Early news broadcasts were for the most part re-broadcasts of material taken (with permission) from the BBC, and from other stations” ([Horgan, 2004](#), p. 4). When 2RN choose to broadcast its own news, the BBC acted as a check on the selection made: Cumann na nGaedheal leader W.T. Cosgrave “on one occasion expressed his wonderment at the fact that on one particular day, the BBC news had reported two speeches from the Dáil in its 6pm news while Radio Éireann, 40 minutes later, had reported only one” — that of the minister ([Horgan, 2004](#), p. 9).

Reporting was, however, a limited part of what 2RN did. Richard [Pine \(2002, p. 8\)](#), paraphrasing Lasswell, notes that 2RN “was not so much concerned with who *said* what as with who *sang* what, since its early programming was predominantly musical”. News programming was minimal and current affairs programming almost non-existent. As Ireland had no indigenous press agency, any domestic news would either have to come from 2RN stringers or from material re-broadcast from newspaper copy; and yet agreements similar to those in place in the UK prevented

2RN from carrying items from the morning and evening newspapers. This meant that much news was international, and consequently less controversial. Despite the station being a part of the government, the political branding of the station's output was "marginal" (Pine, 2002, p. 145) and non-ideological. "Controversy was conspicuous by its absence". Ministerial statements were few in number; any excess of enthusiasm — such as an unconfirmed leak about coalition negotiations suspected to have been planted by the minister in charge — was balanced by a compensatory broadcast for the opposition. Whether this avoidance of controversy was the design of the station or of the ministry is not clear: Horgan (2004, p. 7) sees it as benefitting the government of the time:

"if controversial political statements by or on behalf of government spokesmen had to be balanced by statements from the Opposition, the absence of controversial statements by the Government would have the beneficial effect of keeping the opposition away from the microphone. And this, for quite some time, seems to have been part of the rationale for the editorial decision, conscious or otherwise, to afford news a generally low priority"

The Fianna Fáil government of 1932 employed the station more than its Cumann na nGaedheal predecessor: de Valera began a habit of biannual radio addresses (McLoone, 1991, p. 13), directed as much to Irish abroad as to the domestic market. Fianna Fáil did remove some figures felt to be opposed to the party, such as C.E. Kelly (Director of Broadcasting between 1948 and 1951 and erstwhile editor of satirical review *Dublin Opinion*), but others which more objectionable views were left in place or even promoted: this was the case of former Cumann na nGaedheal General Secretary Séamus Hughes, who was promoted to Acting Station Director under Fianna Fáil (Pine, 2002, p. 141).

2RN during this time was thus more a state broadcaster than a public broadcaster. It was so in two senses. First, it participated in the state's mission of making good Irish men and women, wherever they might be. Thus, although the government's 1948 plan for a short-wave service to broadcast to the Irish diaspora never came about, the funds which had already been allocated to 2RN for service improvements were wisely spent, allowing 2RN to develop

its first internal news service (Fisher, 1978, p. 22; Horgan, 2004, p. 14). Second, for structural reasons connected to its placement within the Ministry, it enjoyed less independence than the public service broadcaster *par excellence*, the BBC (McLoone, 1991, p. 13).

Greater independence came in 1951 when Erskine Childers took over as Minister for Posts and Telegraphs. Childers was committed *in principle* to Radio Éireann's greater independence, but was forever tempted to interfere in day-to-day matters. Nevertheless, aided by his department's private secretary Leon Ó Broin (Horgan, 2004, p. 16), Childers instituted a series of changes, resurrecting the five-member *Comhairle* [Council] which had lapsed in 1933, and which was to act as an executive body sandwiched between the management of the broadcaster and the minister himself. Childers also persuaded TDs not to place detailed questions about Radio Éireann's operation in the Dáil (Ó Broin, 1976, p. 14). Childers also permitted the first unscripted political discussions.

The increased standing of Radio Éireann was shown when one minister, Neil Blaney, was moved from the Ministry of Posts and Telegraphs after having expressed no confidence in Radio Éireann without having first expressed his views either to the *Comhairle* or the to management. When Maurice Gorham, station director (and former Director of the BBC's television service) threatened resignation, De Valera moved Blaney to Local Government, judging him more expendable than Gorham and the members of the *Comhairle*, who were at that time participating in anguished discussions concerning the introduction of television (Savage, 1996, p. 95), which was finally approved in 1960 with the passage of the *Broadcasting Authority Act*.

9.2 REFOUNDATION, CONFRONTATION (1960 — 1976)

The 1960 Act re-established Radio Éireann, now Radio Telefís Éireann, as an independent entity responsible to the Minister of Posts and Telegraphs. The choice of giving Radio Éireann additional responsibility for television was not expected: plans for commercial television were well-developed and looked to have the cabinet's favour before the Taoiseach Sean Lémass abruptly changed his mind. Indeed, the name of the broadcaster's board — the RTÉ

Authority — is a relic from earlier legislative plans which would have seen a regulatory not executive authority oversee commercial television.

The new Authority members were appointed for three year terms, and could appoint the director-general of RTÉ given ministerial consent. Maurice Gorham was succeeded by American Edward J. Roth; he was aided by another international import, Gunnar Rugheimer, “a Swedish national [who] had acquired much of his broadcasting experience in Canada” (Horgan, 2004, p. 22).

The 1960 Act required RTÉ to present areas of controversy “objectively and impartially”. It is worth quoting John Horgan’s discussion of this term at length:

“The phrase ‘objectively and impartially’ bespeaks a cultural, political and ideological world-view firmly rooted in the 1950s. The drafters of this phrase, the politicians who introduced it, and the audience to which it was addressed, would have been in little doubt about what they thought it actually meant. Impartiality and objectivity were the Holy Grail of Journalism; the idea that they might be difficult of attainment, or even problematic in themselves, was a hot topic only in the dim and distant recesses of the Frankfurt school. . . . *Fair representation of the views of those you were reporting did not present much of a problem: journalists had been doing this one way or another since the partisan press of the nineteenth century had to some extent been overtaken by the mass circulation media of the twentieth. . . .* Most of the legislators who debated the 1960 Broadcasting Act would have understood [impartiality] as primarily related to the permanent struggle between government and opposition. Some more sophisticated commentators might have interpreted it as having a relevance to the amount of coverage given to different political parties whether in government or not. Nobody, it is safe to say, would have interpreted it as having a relevance to – for instance – a conflict of wills as between the Dáil and elements in civil society” (Horgan, 2004, pp. 24-25).

The italicised section of the quote should be noted. The overtaking of the partisan press is a phenomenon which arose

in Ireland thanks to contamination by Britain, and which did not arise in our other cases. As far as the “amount of coverage given to different political parties” was concerned, most of the clashes between the government and the broadcaster did not concern the distribution of time between the parties — which RTÉ regularly dealt with by furnishing breakdowns on screen-time (Horgan, 2004, p. 20) — but rather with *raisons d'état* and the presence of civil society. With the former, the government was able to convince RTÉ to pull programmes — one programme on the government’s civil defence initiatives, for example, was cancelled by the broadcaster after the minister forcefully intimated to executives that its broadcast would not be welcome (Horgan, 2004, p. 20). With the latter, however, new boundaries were being set. The most celebrated incident of this period was a programme concerning the government’s agriculture policy, which is notable not so much for the incident itself (which involved a government minister phoning the broadcaster to reproach it for the ‘excessive’ space given to farmers’ representatives in the National Farmers’ Association (NFA)) but for the statement made by Taoiseach Sean Lémass in response to criticism that arose:

“RTE was set up by legislation as an instrument of public policy and as such is responsible to the government. The government has overall responsibility for its conduct and especially the obligation to ensure that its programmes do not offend against the public interest or conflict with national policy as defined in legislation. *To this extent the Government reject the view that RTE should be, either generally or in regard to its current affairs and news programmes, completely independent of Government supervision.* As a public institution supported by public funds and operating under statute, it has the duty, while maintaining impartiality between political parties, to present programmes which inform the public regarding current affairs, to sustain public respect for the institutions of Government and, where appropriate, to assist public understanding of the policies enshrined in legislation enacted by the Oireachtas” (quoted in Horgan, 2002, pp. 85–86).

Lemass’ statement is certainly not as crude as some who later deployed it made it out to be, but it is nonetheless

indicative of the somewhat Gaullist attitude referred to earlier. It should certainly not be depicted as a power-play by Fianna Fáil to take over RTÉ: as John Horgan notes, “on the part of some of the politicians involved, the primary emotion being expressed was less hostility than bafflement” (Horgan, 2004, p. 27). That RTÉ had the upper hand in negotiations with politicians, Lemass’ declaration notwithstanding, is shown by the meeting between RTÉ executives and politicians following the NFA dispute: the account given in Dowling *et al.* (1969, pp. 89-90) shows how RTÉ executives were able to out-interpret the agreements they had concluded with the politicians:

“Jack White and Gunnar Rugheimer [Director of Television] went to Leinster House to discuss Division with the Party Whips. This was on foot of a telephone call from the Fianna Fáil Chief Whip, Mr. Michael Carty, who said that RTE had broken the agreement about Division (presumably because Mr. Deasy [NFA] was not a politician). His real purpose, it was felt at the time, was to ensure that Mr. Deasy be withdrawn from the programme - in which case Mr. Haughey would go on. This was a political fox-trot. Rugheimer knew that there was no such agreement. He suggested that since Mr. Carty believed that RTE had broken the agreement it must be a very serious matter. Why did Deputy Carty not call a meeting of the whips?

“[At the meeting, White and Rugheimer] produced the memorandum from the meeting which had agreed the procedures for Division. It simply stated that politicians would be invited through the Whips. They read this aloud and then enquired what Mr. Carty’s complaints were? If the other two Whips did not know what was going on at the beginning of the meeting, it slowly began to dawn on them. Mr Carty was trying to make it appear that the Whips had understood Division to be a programme for politicians only. His co-whips weren’t having any of this nonsense. They said there was no such agreement. Things rested so. The broadcast was to go ahead without Mr. Haughey” (p. 89-90).

Bafflement from politicians resulted not only from the novelty of the medium but also from the less deferential ap-

proach adopted by television and radio journalists, many of whom were not traditional journalists but were instead drawn from academia. Noted political scientist Brian Farrell was also an RTÉ reporter. So was Mary Robinson, at the time still a lecturer in law. These “younger producers and directors, and some presenters, were effectively broadcast journalists even though their job descriptions did not include the word. Many of them, in the programme division, were no members of the journalists’ trade union, the NUJ, but of equity or the Workers’ Union of Ireland. They found themselves in many respects rejecting the political consensus that had been established under older media systems and challenging its basic tenets” (Horgan, 2004, p. 48).

One such basic tenet was impartiality, which, during the sixties, was not openly attacked but certainly was paid less heed. Much later, Eoghan Harris, a producer, wrote training documents which openly challenged “traditional notions of ‘impartiality’ and ‘objectivity’... and argued that such antediluvian notions had been banished from RTÉ’s Programmes Division by Lelia Doolan and himself, “which is why Today Tonight is so good and why the public trust it”. “Television, he argued, was not about thought but about emotion, not about facts but about truth - and ‘professionalism’ ideologically excluded both” (Horgan, 2004, p. 187).

Though it would be tempting to conclude so, it was not covert or overt disregard for impartiality which led to the removal of the RTÉ Authority in 1972 and the subsequent adoption of a Broadcasting Act in 1976 which granted RTÉ greater statutory independence in exchange for an explicit commitment to objectivity and impartiality in all of its output, not just in news and current affairs. Rather, it was coverage of Northern Ireland. The Troubles in that province began in the late sixties and posed serious problems not only for the British and Northern Irish governments, but also for the government of the Republic which needed to show to the Heath government that it too was ‘tough’ on the IRA. To that end, it issued a directive under section 31 of the 1960 Act, which empowered the Minister to prevent broadcasting on any subject or class of subjects in language, and which was analogous to a provision in the BBC’s Royal Charter. That directive required RTÉ to

“refrain from broadcasting any matter that could be calculated to promote the aims or ac-

tivities of any organization which engages in, promotes, encourages or advocates the attaining of any political objective by violent means” (Horgan, 2002, p. 91)

The directive was, of course, entirely unhelpful, and the Ministry refused to make it clear that the target of the directive was Sinn Féin, the IRA’s political wing. Nor was the Government entirely or equally vigilant: a number of interviews with Sinn Féin members were inadvertently broadcast before one such interview, in 1973, came to the Government’s attention. Having ascertained that the directive had been breached; being unsatisfied with the Authority’s response (essentially a plea in mitigation); in need to a token to show to the Heath government; and having no other possible sanctions to employ, the government dismissed the Authority and appointed a new one. This power would shortly be taken away from the government when Fine Gael and Labour returned to power in 1973 — but they too imposed a similar directive, and were critical of RTÉ’s impartiality and objectivity, or lack thereof.

9.3 1976 UNTIL THE PRESENT DAY

Following the 1973 election which brought a Fine Gael-Labour coalition back to government, a Broadcasting Review Committee was established. The committee’s judgement on RTÉ was largely negative, accusing the broadcaster of exercising inadequate care in the “recruitment, appointment, training and supervision of staff”, as well as that the station was “falling short of required standards in relation to impartiality and objectivity”. The negative judgements were confirmed by an internal News Division report, which said that “there was lack of discipline, rehearsal, and pride” in the News Departments’ work (Horgan, 2004, pp. 127, 126).

The government’s response was to tighten the relevant provisions of the Broadcasting Authority Act pertaining to objectivity and impartiality. These two terms would now be requirements across all of RTÉ’s output, not just in the treatment of controversial affairs. This extra requirement was balanced in the new legislation by the drastic curtailment of ministerial powers to dismiss the board: whilst the minister retained the power to initiate dismissal, any such

dismissal (of a single member of the board or of the entire board) would have to be confirmed by a two-thirds vote of the Oireachtas.

The Section 31 restrictions continued to be a bone of contention between broadcaster and government, but did not provoke further recriminations as serious as those seen in 1973. On certain instances, RTÉ was able, thanks to the force of its arguments, to break the rules: in the late seventies the company judged that Sinn Féin, despite being the political wing of the IRA, was nonetheless entitled to party political broadcasts as a party registered in and competing in the Republic. As Horgan notes, “The government then - as RTÉ more or less anticipated it would — moved to add party political broadcasts by or on behalf of Sinn Féin to the matters proscribed... the fact that the government amended the directive rather than charge RTÉ with being in breach of it demonstrated the objectivity validity of RTÉ’s decision” (Horgan, 2004, p. 173).

Finally, though, it was RTÉ which was able to convince the minister that self-regulation would be a more astute course than the maintenance of a ban. In this it was aided by the presence of a telecommunications minister (Michael D. Higgins) who, far from being dyspeptic, had a “sense of humour” in his dealings with RTÉ (Quinn, 2001, p. 13). The Authority sent Higgins a series of guidelines which it promised to follow should the section 31 ban be lifted. The guidelines “may have strengthened [the minister’s] hand. When the directive was finally allowed to lapse on 19 January 1994, Higgins having secured Cabinet approval... the revised guidelines were issued within 24 hours” (Horgan, 2004, p. 201). In this respect, RTÉ was able to do a favour for the BBC: the continuance of the British policy became anachronistic in the light of RTÉ’s successful lobbying, and a “somewhat annoyed” Mrs. Thatcher was forced to rescind the similar directive which bound the British broadcaster.

Despite their maintenance of power, Fianna Fáil continued to be suspicious of RTÉ. (This suspicion can perhaps be interpreted as an oblique compliment to RTÉ’s independence from government). In part, this was because the suspected the station of having been infiltrated by sympathisers for, if not militants in, Sinn Féin/The Workers’ Party.

Fianna Fáil’s responses were varied. There was a squeeze on finances: Ray Burke, who was, exceptionally, both Foreign

Minister and Communications Minister, had imposed a cap on the amount of revenue RTÉ could raise through revenue, and had mandated RTÉ to provide transmission services for a new commercial competitor, Century Radio, at a rate which RTÉ believed was not only below commercial rates, but below cost. These moves undoubtedly derived from Burke's animus towards RTÉ, which was also manifested in outbursts towards RTÉ staff: in the early nineties, he warned one current affairs producer (Peter Feeney, later to become RTÉ's head of Public Affairs) that his "career would go no further" (Quinn, 2001, p. 109). It did not help, however, that commercial competitors to RTÉ were bribing Burke to further their case (McNally, 2002).

A second response was to set up another public channel which, it was hoped, would be more sympathetic to Fianna Fáil. "When Charles J Haughey, then Taoiseach, was emerging from the RTÉ studies in the late eighties after a not too friendly interview, he turned to his companions and said, "Never mind, we'll soon have our own fucking station"". That station became Telefís na Gaeilge, set up with much (government-mandated) help from RTÉ.

Towards the end of the nineties, however, with the issue of the treatment of terrorist groups in Northern Ireland less salient, and with Fianna Fáil seemingly sated, the cases of interference became limited, at least at top levels. Bob Quinn, a former RTÉ producer who had resigned in the nineteen-sixties over what he saw as the commercialization of RTÉ, and who had written a book on the topic along with two other producers (Dowling *et al.*, 1969), was appointed to the RTÉ Authority in 1995 thanks, again, to Michael D. Higgin's good sense of humour. And whilst Quinn from his works seems sensitive to political interference, the example that he cites — and indeed, the example that led him to resign from the broadcaster in 199? — is not a clear case of political interference in the sense I understand it, but rather an uneasy collusion between the politicians' view of politics-in-the-Dáil as all-important, and the broadcasters' view of political views as represented in the Dáil as the all-important metric for representing public opinion. The issue concerned RTÉ's treatment of referendums in those cases where party opinion in the Dáil was overwhelmingly in favour of one option, but where public opinion was more evenly divided. In defending its position, RTÉ took the case to the Supreme Court, incurred significant legal fees on the way. Quinn thought that the case offered RTÉ

the best of both worlds — it could cut down on the party political broadcasts it offered (which were in any case little appreciated by the viewer) and thereby mitigate questions of bias in this most formal allocation of broadcast time. He therefore viewed the actions of the management of the broadcaster with suspicion, intimating that RTÉ's continued defence of its position was a result of political pressure:

“If RTÉ is an instrument of public policy and the body politic legislates for this policy, then RTÉ must at least minimally conform to government wishes. Hence, when informal contacts suggest a political unhappiness with a situation — particularly a threat to politicians' unfettered and free access to the airwaves — it must be inevitable that there will be certain, perhaps inarticulated, pressures on RTÉ to act in the interests of its paymasters. The political establishment could certainly not be seen to challenge Coughlan [the initiator of the complaint] directly. My perhaps naive deduction was that that was the reason why the attorney general, on behalf of the government, "associated" himself with RTÉ's appeal against the Coughlan judgement” (Quinn, 2001, p. 247).

Yet even here, there is only the suspicion of governmental influence. Whilst the inference is weak — Quinn would certainly not have known of much going on at lower levels of RTÉ, which indeed was one of his complaints — it seems that at the highest levels RTÉ by the end of the nineties was not subject to overt attempts to interfere in its work.

RTÉ is therefore, like its neighbour and initial inspiration the BBC, relatively politically independent. It is clear that RTÉ does not owe this independence to the size of its market for news. Rather, it has benefitted from importing certain views about impartiality, and certain approaches to politics — for example, inter-party agreements on coverage of politics — from the BBC. Thus, the negative effects of a small market for news in a particular may be circumvented where the broadcaster in that country learns from a larger homolingual neighbour. As far as legal protection is concerned, it is clear that the (limited) degree of independence RTÉ enjoyed from its foundation until the sixties cannot be explained by the degree of legal protection it enjoyed. Only after the reforms of 1960 and 1976 did RTÉ gain a modicum

of legal protection. This too, however, was accompanied by demands for impartiality and objectivity, demands which were convenient both to politicians and to the broadcaster.

9.4 CONCLUSION

This chapter has, in part, attempted to act as a check on the findings of the previous chapter concerning the BBC. In part, however, the conclusions of this chapter demonstrate the great influence of the BBC upon Irish broadcasting. Although this undermines the usefulness of RTÉ as a control case, it does vindicate the usefulness of precisely the techniques and strategies identified by the BBC to minimize political interference – after all, these practices were not forced on RTÉ, but adopted in view of their usefulness. The extent of diffusion can be seen in recapitulating the main findings of this chapter, namely that

- the market for news in Ireland was extremely limited, so much so that Irish journalists had to moonlight as Irish correspondents for London newspapers;
- second, that despite the limited market, or perhaps because of it, Irish journalists understood the requirements of journalism as practised in Britain; in particular, the concept of impartiality was readily understood and accepted at the time Irish public broadcasting started;
- third, that the notion of impartiality within the first Irish public broadcaster, 2RN, was further bolstered by the re-broadcasting of content from the BBC, which often became a comparison for the station's output;
- fourth, that over time 2RN and Radio Éireann actively worked to import experienced individuals and practices – such as agreements with party whips – from the BBC;
- fifth, that these agreements, and commitments to impartiality, were used by Radio Éireann and later by RTÉ, in order to defuse government objections and to win greater legal protection respectively;
- sixth, where RTÉ has fallen short of required standards of impartiality, the government has stepped in to impose greater impartiality

Consequently, although the genesis of rules concerning broadcast output does not conform to the theory outlined in this thesis, the more recent history of RTÉ does show that, once impartiality and rules surrounding its attainment had been imported from the neighbouring BBC, they were used in just the way this thesis suggests – to dampen government interference in the public broadcaster.

‘DISTURBING NEITHER GOD NOR HITLER’:
SR/SVT

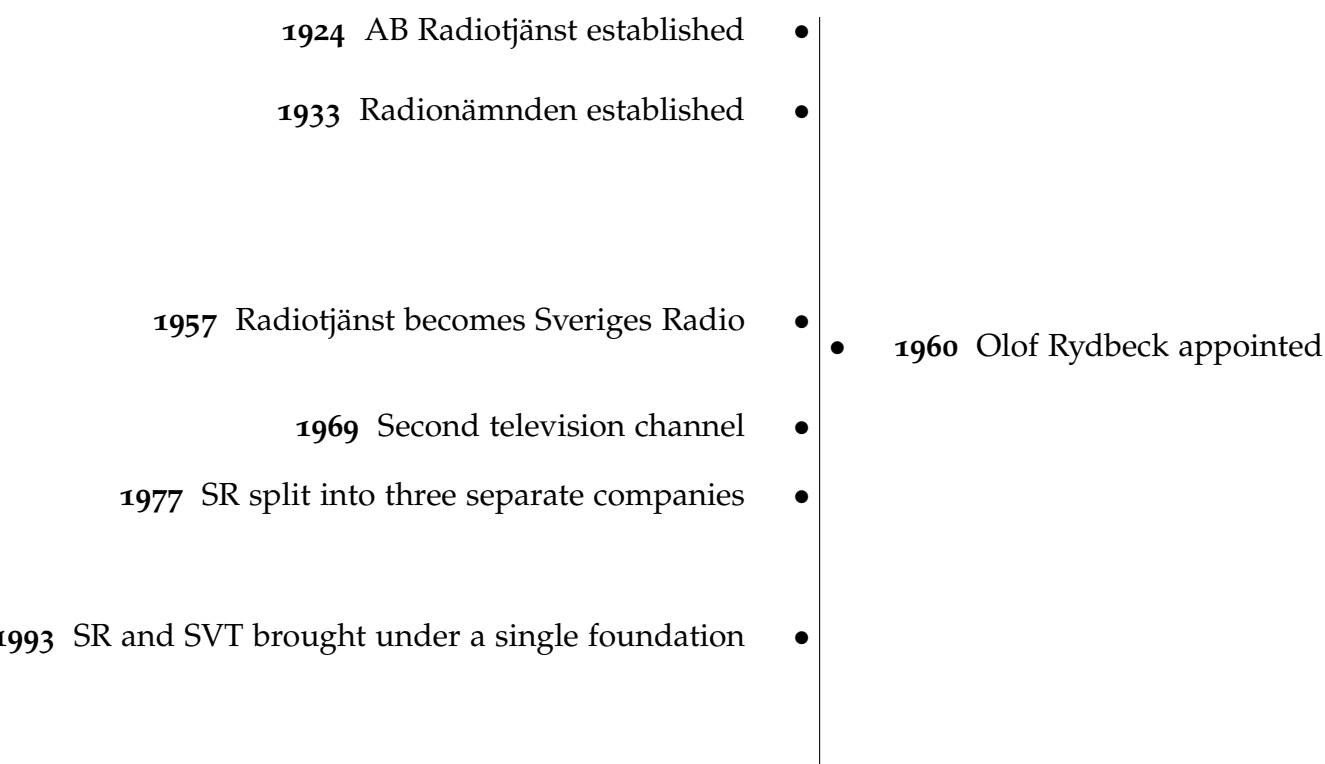
In a debate organised by the Swedish public broadcasting company Radiotjänst, Olof Forsén, head of the talks section, admitted that radio had hardly challenged listeners during its first three decades. Forsén attributed this to the “considerable extenuating circumstances” surrounding the new medium, and explained Radiotjänst’s approach thusly:

“At the time we used to say that one should ‘disturb neither God nor Hitler’, and obviously no swear words could crop up. In radio, we stuck to the view that we could hope to remain free so long as we kept ourselves neutral and didn’t touch upon exciting issues. Otherwise we would become state radio, and lose the freedom that we appreciated so highly” (quoted in [Hadenius, 1998](#), p. 119)

This chapter is devoted to justifying Forsén’s claim: that Radiotjänst and its successor companies Sveriges Radio AB and Sveriges Television AB have historically maintained their independence from politics by binding themselves to certain rules governing their conduct, rules which were at times criticised for their excessive rigidity, but which nevertheless aided the company in maintaining its independence.

This strategy was partly a result of external circumstances over which Radiotjänst had no control - the company was, for example, required to take all of its hard news from the largest wire agency, *Tidningarnas Telegrambyrå* (TT), until 1943. Yet as Forsén’s quote demonstrates, the adoption of certain self-binding strictures was also a conscious strategy to preserve the broadcaster’s room for manoeuvre. These rules were moulded over time to fit the circumstances: certain strictures came to be seen as unnecessary or old-fashioned, whilst certain other rules were required by the

Figure 10.1: SVT timeline



possibilities opening up. The apogee of this strategy came under the directorship of Olof Rydbeck, an outsider to Radiotjänst, who centralised and systematised news coverage to a considerable degree, winning the broadcaster continued latitude despite difficulties arising from, variously, Communist party representation in Parliament, Swedish foreign relations, and increased permissiveness in Swedish society.

The importance of this strategy is seen in the consequences of its non-application at the beginning of the seventies. Massive expansion of the broadcaster, combined with parliament-imposed limits on Rydbeck's influence in recruitment, meant an influx of journalists with radical left views. Their main target, however, was often as not the Social Democratic party. Paradoxically, the backlash prompted by this radicalization only came with the return of the bourgeois parties to government in the late seventies, and organizational reforms which brought politically connected journalists and chief executives to positions of power within the broadcaster.

This chapter is divided into three broad parts, each of which deals with a particular period in Swedish public broadcasting. The first period runs from 1925 to 1955, a period in which Radiotjänst's output was heavily conditioned by its reliance on TT and by its limited news-gathering resources. The second period, from 1955 to 1975, corresponds roughly to Olof Rydbeck's time in charge of the broadcaster, as Sveriges Radio had to deal with the difficulties of presenting its own news and current affairs. The third period, from 1975 to the current day, is dealt with more briefly, and recounts the backlash against a perceived radicalization of Sveriges Radio and Sveriges Television.

10.1 AB RADIOTJÄNST, 1924 - 1954

The Swedish press in the early 20th century

Despite Sweden's relatively small population, the Swedish market for news was boisterously competitive. After all, the potential market, in relation to the total population, was extremely large. Near-universal rates of literacy were reached by 1850, when literacy amongst rural males was around 85% and about 93% in the prison population (Nils-son *et al.*, 1999, fig. 1; Cipolla, 1969, p. 77: statistics for the general population are not available). These figures - astonishingly high in comparative context - meant not only that the vast majority of the adult population were potential newspaper-buyers, but also that the potential stock of journalists was much greater, and much less likely to be drawn from Establishment circles.

Given such potential, newspaper sales at the beginning of the twentieth century were also high. The largest newspaper at the turn of the century, *Stockholms-Tidningen*, had a circulation of around 100,000 - more than *The Times* and the *Manchester Guardian* combined (Wadsworth, 1954, p. 3), on a metropolitan population of approximately a quarter of a million. Total newspaper circulation in Stockholm was roughly three hundred thousand (Lundström *et al.*, 2001, p. 27). Sales had also become more concentrated. "Small companies with an editor and one or two co-workers became fewer in number" (Pettersson, 2006, p. 35).

With growing circulation came growing wages. Editors began to be increasingly well-rewarded for their work, with

wages of between ten to twelve thousand kronor per year, roughly ten times the wage of a skilled municipal worker (carpenter, plumber) in Stockholm (Bagge *et al.*, 1935, p.55). By 1920, an estimated one thousand journalists were earning roughly two-thirds as much as doctors, with editors faring better still (Lindahl *et al.*, 1937, Appendix H, p. 521).

Questions concerning pay were, however, only part of the explanation for the growth of organised interest representation amongst journalists. Status also mattered. The first attempts to unionise journalists began in the late eighties, with a series of meetings held around the country. Whilst these meetings - which would eventually lead to the formation of the Publicistklubben in 1874 - discussed a variety of issues, "the theme which was most often debated during those first years was raising the reputation of the press" (Petersson, 2006, p. 40). Indeed, the Publicistklubben's predominant concern with increasing the reputation of the press at the cost of neglecting other objectives led to the breakaway, in 1901, of a minority of the club which left to form the *Svensk Journalistföreningen* (Swedish Journalists' Union).

This yearning for better reputation was necessitated by the disparate social background of journalists. Even before the word 'journalist' came into popular use, Swedes had already begun to use a term for 'hack journalist': "*murvel*", "a person lacking both in character and in competence", according to one 19th century dictionary (Petersson, 2006, p. 43). Even the very name of the Publicistklubben tells us something about the strategies employed by journalists. The term publicist "denoted a writer in general. Through its origin in the Roman concept of the public space, it had a promising ring to it, and was associated with public discussion. It therefore became natural for the press to annex it in its battle for legitimacy in society" (Nordmark *et al.*, 2001, p. 225). The term publicist - soon supplanted by the more specific 'journalist' - served as a replacement for another term, "*litteratör*", another import - this time from French - which, denoting those who occupied themselves with literature in general, did indeed connote distinction, but which could hardly be maintained as the market for news in Sweden grew beyond the intelligentsia and became a non-literary mass product.

These changes of nomenclature would not aid the project of improving journalists' social standing if both access to

the profession and its output were not carefully overseen. The SJF, in its first wages campaign, asked for a minimum salary for journalists, provided they had a minimum of two years' education, lest "individuals who had failed in other areas or whose personal characteristics in certain respects made them unsuitable for intellectual activity" be recruited (Petersson, 2006, p. 69). For its part, the Publicistklubben concentrated on journalistic ethics, drafting the first moves towards a journalistic code of ethics in 1900, and publishing the first rules in 1923 (Sterzel, 1971, p. 12). These rules were, for a time, toothless, as there was no organization in place to sanction any infringement of the rules. The Publicistklubben's first congress in 1916 had agreed unanimously that a press ombudsman should be set up, but economic difficulties meant that the post was only established in 1928, and even then on a part-time basis only (Petersson, 2006, p. 161). Nevertheless, the formation of the rules – the so-called *publiceringsregler* – played an important symbolic role in defending the journalistic profession, just as similar rules would defend Sveriges Radio: the Publicistklubben was able to revise its rules in 1933 in response to a Riksdag motion on smut and violence in the newspapers, thereby pre-empting legislative action (Petersson, 2006, p. 365). The debate which formed around the rules led to the progressive development of principle. Towards the end of this period, in 1953, this led to the formal inclusion in the *publiceringsregler* of the principle that news and opinion should be separated.

The importance of the distinction between fact and opinion was understood long before 1953, however. This was particularly true when it came to the reporting of foreign news. The large number of regional newspapers could scarcely afford to collect foreign news themselves: they therefore relied on news bureaus for over 90% of their foreign material (Lundström *et al.*, 2001, p. 285). Reliance on agency copy nevertheless became an issue during the First World War: the dominant news agency, FGT Eklund's *Svenska Telegrambyrå*, was thought to be pro-German, favouring the copy it received from Germany's Wolff over Reuters or Havas-supplied copy: Reuters and Havas eventually broke with the agency in the summer of 1918, choosing instead to supply the main competitor *Nordiska Presscentralen* - initially founded with support from Allied powers (Lundström *et al.*, 2001, p. 126). After the war, neither of the two rival companies could reckon upon foreign financial support: after

a brief period of merger, they were bought out by a group of provincial newspapers. The new company - *Tidningarnas Telegrambyrå*, TT - emphasised its impartiality (*opartiskhet*) in order that it might avoid the same divisions between its predecessors (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 25). The importance placed on impartiality would become particularly important for the first public broadcasting company in Sweden, Radiotjänst, in which TT would play a major role.

Radiotjänst's establishment

Despite early amateur interest, the state took the lead in the development of radio. The state *Telegrafstyrelse* (Telegraph Board) had represented Sweden at various international conferences on the assignment of frequencies through its active radio unit, headed by Seth Ljungqvist. When, between spring 1922 and spring 1923, various companies began to submit applications for radio broadcasting licenses, the *Telegrafstyrelse* submitted a proposal to the cabinet, recognising that radio technology was a positive development, and arguing three main points: first, that a single program company should be given a concession, since this was the most rational, not to mention the cheapest, solution; second, that any program company which received the concession should include both radio manufacturers and TT; and third, that the government should delegate authority to the *Telegrafstyrelse* to negotiate the concession (Hadenius, 1998, p. 21-22).

Why should the *Telegrafstyrelse* specify participants in the radio consortium even before negotiations had begun, and why should this point have been accepted by the government? That radio manufacturers should be included in the program company was not particularly unusual, given that they had both the necessary expertise and interest, and that the same solution had already been adopted in Britain with the formation of the British Broadcasting Company. More important are the reasons for TT's inclusion. In a meeting of Nordic regulatory authorities in Copenhagen in 1922, members had agreed that broadcasting, "should it fall into the wrong hands, could be exploited in a politically-biased fashion", a conclusion which was repeated in the proposal to the cabinet (Thurén, 1997, p. 28). Including TT would

avoid this danger: the company would be "a guarantee against misuse" (Hadenius, 1998, p. 22).

The insistence on TT's participation in radio is a further example of the theory presented in the chapter 2, viz., that, given uncertainty about the partisan beliefs of those producing news, independence may be preserved by the enforcement or adoption of procedural rules which ensure news which is seen to be fair and balanced. TT's news was cautious, official, and impersonal verging on the robotic: it always stood behind, and not in front, of its source:

"TT broadcasts were principally built on official sources who "reported" events. This had its impact even on the language of the broadcasts: "The Agriculture Commission reports that...", or "It is reported by the Swedish Employers' Association that...". Newsreaders also had orders to be impersonal" (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 56)

Hadenius (1998, p. 25) implies that TT had an additional advantage, in that, through its ownership structure (it was owned by a consortium of local newspapers), it represented the entire political spectrum. Yet we should not take this to mean that politicians, still less broadcasters, sought to achieve impartiality or balance by the presentation of opposing partial interests. TT's news ideal, that of *opartiskhet* (impartiality), infused radio. "The news ideal which TT represented was also radio's: there was confidence in TT's capacity to disseminate the day's most important bulletins in an impartial fashion" (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 31). There was, it must be said, an expectation that TT would represent the interests of the state: the company had signed a secret agreement with the Foreign Ministry according to which TT agreed to refer potentially damaging news bulletins to the Ministry for their decision (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 25). But it was unlikely that any politicians personally expected to be in a position to exploit radio: they largely adopted "a restrained and cautious attitude. There was no-one in any party who distinguished himself as a specialist in radio" (Hadenius, 1998, p. 32)

That TT's inclusion was essential can be seen from the quality of the bids which were turned down in order to make way for TT. A large joint application made by AEG, Svenska Radiobolaget, ASEA, Ericsson, NK, and Åhlén &

Holm was frozen out after having ignored press and TT interests (Hadenius, 1998, p. 24). When industry realised it was being outmanoeuvred by the warm ties between TT and the Telegrafstyrelsen, they became less haughty, and after its initial formation as an entirely press-owned enterprise, AB Radiotjänst was reformed as a joint stock company with a capitalization of between 100,000 and 300,000 kronor, with a total of forty-seven groups owning shares in the company. Groups representing the press owned two-thirds of the shares; groups representing industry one-third (Sävström *et al.*, 1946, p. 8). The return on capital, at around six percent a year, meant that the investment was pursued primarily as a way of influencing the company, rather than obtaining profit. Nevertheless, thanks to the terms of the agreement with the telegrafstyrelse, "the press failed to get a board majority on a company in which it own more than two-thirds of the shares" (Hadenius, 1998, p. 29).

The agreement between the Telegrafstyrelsen and AB Radiotjänst was approved by the King on the 3rd October 1924; Radiotjänst started broadcasting on the 1st of January the following year. Under the agreement, Radiotjänst would be a monopoly supplier of radio broadcast material, with the radio network owned and maintained by the telegrafstyrelse. Initially, the concession was limited to just one year: following a request from the board, the concession period was increased to two years from 1927, and later to three years.

According to §9 of the agreement between the company and the telegrafstyrelsen,⁹⁹ Radiotjänst was required to source all of its news from TT. This commitment had originally been stricter: all messages "with political overtones" were to be supplied by TT (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 26), but this restriction was removed from the final version. Radiotjänst was, however, bound to act "on a high intellectual, cultural, and artistic level, and to be distinguished by reliability, truthfulness, and impartiality" (§7).

The company would be led by a board of seven members. The King-in-Council was appoint the chairman of the board as well as one additional member (§16), with the remaining five members to be appointed by the share-holders, which in practice meant three representatives of the press and two from the radio industry (Hadenius, 1998, p. 33). (This

⁹⁹ Olsson *et al.* (As reprinted in 1935)

balance was reversed ten years later, however, with the King now appointing four of the seven members, including the chairman (Hadenius, 1998, p. 50)). Board members' terms were left unspecified, except that the company's annual AGM had as a recurring agenda item the appointment of shareholders' representatives to the board. The company was to be run on a day to day basis by the managing director appointed by the board, who would refer important decisions to the board's three-member executive committee. The company's activities were to be financed by a share of the licence fee required to own a radio receiver but, crucially, this share was subject to revision.

In addition to the board, the managing director's work was to be supervised by a radio board (*radiorådet*) of five members charged with "establishing and overseeing program work" (Hadenius, 1998, p. 50). This board - dismissed in earlier negotiations but revived on the suggestion of Sven Lübeck, the new right-wing communications minister in Ernst Trygger's government - would become one potential source of interference that Radiotjänst sought to get rid off, transforming and co-opting it to become a more useful ally. This - along with battles over finance and nationalization - was one of the legal-institutional episodes detailed in the next section. At the time of Radiotjänst's formation, however, the strong position of the press - and in particular, its wholly owned news agency TT - meant that government was able to give a monopoly over radio to a privately owned company whilst being assuaged about the political neutrality of that company. At the same time, however, the legal framework that company operated in was extremely fragile, with a concession limited to one year, and financing dependent on a potentially altered share of uncertain licence fee revenues. Yet the key term that would govern the company - *opartiskhet* - was as well established in law as it would become in practice.

Legal attacks

The limited concession led almost immediately to an attack of Radiotjänst's finances. Radio licences sold strongly in pre-war Sweden, with 108 of every 1,000 Swedes owning a radio licence by 1933, compared with 130 in Britain and only 8.8 in Italy (Elgemyr, 1996, p. 268). Although only a part of this revenue went to Radiotjänst, the fecundity of

this source attracted unwanted attention. Finance Minister Felix Hamrin met with members of the Radiotjänst board, and asked for Radiotjänst to make savings out of solidarity with the country and its deteriorating financial position. "Board members expressed their full understanding for this goal, and promised to implement savings. . . According to Manne Ginsburg, at that time the secretary to the director-general, the board had been most irritated by this issue being raised, and viewed it as an order only agreed to under duress" (Elgemyr, 1996, p. 261). 84,000 kronor - around five percent of licence fee income - was saved and passed on to the government as a "surplus", though 103 fewer hours were broadcast as a result. Radio chief Julius Rabe insisted that a weather eye be kept on listener opinion, lest licence fee evasion and disappointment rise.

These savings, however, did not succeed in staving off Hamrin, who came back two years later insisting that wages were too high at Radiotjänst, and that the state needed the revenue more than the broadcaster. This time, the threat which had been implicit two years earlier was now explicit: the government threatened not to renew Radiotjänst's concession, and indeed gave the requisite six month notice that it wished to terminate the agreement with the broadcaster. Consequently, after 1933, Radiotjänst received less than 3 kronor for each 10 kronor licence sold.

The incongruity of a private company 'voluntarily' passing on its savings to the state led to some concern in the Riksdag, and a motion was proposed calling for the company to be nationalised. Whether nationalization would have been better or worse for Radiotjänst is difficult to say - the long term independence of the BBC does not seem to have been affected by the transition from the British Broadcasting Company to the British Broadcasting Corporation - but what matters for my argument here is that the company saw the proposal as a threat to its independence, and fought accordingly. What is even more important from the point of view of professionalization is that Radiotjänst was able to win the parliamentary battle by mobilizing knowledge which only it possessed:

The program company had - then as now - a clear advantage in convincing parliamentarians and departments. They had access to knowledge which was difficult for those outside the company to acquire (Hadenius, 1998, p. 47)

The demands for nationalization - and continuing technical issues surrounding what was still a young medium - led to the appointment of the first Radio Committee in 1933. Again the proposal to nationalise the company was raised - and this time the political members of the committee, who enjoyed a majority, came out in favour of nationalization. The Riksdag debate on the committee's proposal showed no great dissatisfaction with Radiotjänst's output; perhaps as a result, the committee's proposal was unsuccessful. Nationalization was off the agenda, although the method of appointing members to the board was changed, with the state - through the King-in-Council - now appointing four, instead of two, members. "Yet the TT-telegrafstyrelsen axis had won a further victory" (Hadenius, 1998, p. 50), for at the same time the group won an extension of the concession period. The board had unsurprisingly recognised that a limited concession period created "feelings of uncertainty" (Elgemyr, 2005, p. 23).

Radiotjänst's cautiousness in programme output probably deserves much of the credit for forestalling attempts to involve parliament or the state more closely in the work of the broadcaster. A 1930 motion asking about what measures the Riksdag could take concerning Radiotjänst was sent to the first chamber's first committee, which dismissed the motion, motivating its decision by saying that there were no grounds for complaints about the objective conduct of Radiotjänst's management. Had the proposer of the motion, John Sandén, cited grounds, then perhaps the motion would have had a better chance of being referred on. But, absent any further background to the motion, the committee was able to cite the proposer's own judgement on Radiotjänst, viz., that "the management responsible for the choice of programs and for broadcasting has, to a considerable degree, handled its burdensome task in an objective and considerate fashion" (Olsson *et al.*, 1935, pp. 105-106).

This judgement was shared by the 1933 committee, which in fact criticised the broadcaster for being too cautious and restricting itself to excessively factual news (Hadenius, 1998, p. 51). Yet this cautious approach had paid dividends, for the committee, discussing the programme council (on which see the next section), argued that "the work carried out within Radiotjänst had become so stable that there was no need for the kind of complaints division" the programråd represented (Hadenius, 1998, p. 51).

The company had therefore convinced most politicians by the middle of the 1930s that their output was cautious, stable, and reliable. In doing so, it had prevented certain types of sporadic parliamentary scrutiny. Principles grew up around these early verdicts. By the late 1940s, the principle was established that the Riksdag would not concern itself with individual Radiotjänst programmes. By the end of the war, the principle was established that ministers would not answer interpellations concerning details of Radiotjänst's activities. Communications Minister Sven Andersson stated that the management "worked in full freedom, but responsibly" (Elgemyr, 2005, p. 413).

Radiotjänst was therefore able to prevent or minimize two of the legal instruments available to politicians who would influence the broadcaster: parliamentary questioning, and the non-renewal of a concession agreement. The company's finances still remained a sensitive point, as the 1974 financial crisis would show, but it is hard to see that Felix Hamrin's attempts to secure a greater share of licence fee revenue were linked in any way to a party political project to influence the broadcaster.

The last potential legal instrument of interference, the programme council, was eventually abolished after the 1933 radio committee found it to be unnecessary. Radiotjänst had long viewed the programme council as an "authority standing between the government and radio" (Hadenius, 1998, p. 52), and indeed the council's remit was broad: it was to be "at the side of the board", of "an advisory nature, schooling the board and assisting in certain respects with the establishment and oversight of radio programs" (Olsson *et al.*, 1935, p. 28) - an impossibly vague objective. As a way of removing the threat the council represented, Radiotjänst drew on existing experience from the world of journalism, and suggested that the programme council should concern itself solely with complaints, without also being an intermediary with the communications department - in other words, "a type of press ombudsman" - a body of the same kind as the Publicistklubben had set up to deal with reader complaints (Elgemyr, 2005, p. 45). This was agreed to in a 1927 revision of the agreement; the board was thereby weakened, and the conclusion of the 1933 radio committee led to its abolition and replacement by the *radionämnden* (lit., 'radio committee'), which continued as a complaints body in the same manner as the press ombudsman.

That the 1933 committee felt able to abolish the *radiator* because of the “regularity” of Radiotjänst’s output must be in no small part due to TT. TT supplied Radiotjänst with up to three news bulletins a day. Each consisted of up to twenty different news items - telegrams, really - which tended not to be repeated between the different editions. As noted above, the style of these bulletins was extremely formulaic and cautious. The very regularity and automaticity of the broadcasts was elevated above its true importance, so much so that Radiotjänst criticised TT for delivering an extra, unscheduled bulletin on the occasion of the Lindberg flight across the Atlantic (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 31)!

Even outside of the news broadcast by TT, the TT-style permeated Radiotjänst’s work. The company had ceded to TT the monopoly on news, but was nonetheless permitted to broadcast reportage, and accounts of happenings in the Riksdag. The company, however, “was at its most careful when dealing with internal politics. Parliamentary coverage was managed for many years by TT’s man in the Riksdag, Thorvald Sachs. There was no commentary without a summary, in the true TT-style, of what had been suggested, said, and decided in the Riksdagen” (Hadenius, 1998, p. 66). More generally,

“as far as internal politics was concerned Radiotjänst solved its common problem with coverage through using the *referat*-form [in which each claim was preceded by its source and repeated almost verbatim]. *Referat*-journalism was therefore a way to live up to the ideals of factual and impartial coverage which required all parties to have the chance to appear on the same terms, and where every news report should hew as close as possible to the facts. Those within Radiotjänst were not pleased with this, but at the same time afraid of any alternative. *It is therefore appropriate to portray the style of referat-journalism as a strategy for avoiding criticism*” (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, pp. 103-4, emphasis added).

Where a *referat*-style could not be employed, and where the risks of being perceived as partisan were too great, the company preferred to ‘outsource’ its journalism: the questions posed to candidates in the election debates between 1946 and 1948 were posed by newspaper journalists, not Radiotjänst employees (Hadenius, 1998, p. 123).

Throughout the pre-war period, and thanks to Radiotjänst's continued attempts to sail closer to the wind, principles gradually developed around the *referat*-style. The election debate of 1932 established that Radiotjänst's impartiality was an impartiality between those opinions which, in virtue of their popular support, had secured representation in the Riksdag. The mid- to late-thirties established the principle that, whilst Radiotjänst would be neutral between Allied and Axis powers in Europe, the last word in a debate or sequence of speeches would not go to those representing dictatorship. Thus, whilst Radiotjänst was able to signal its support for democracy, it was able to do so without disturbing Hitler.

A further principle developed which was to be a catalyst in the next period of Radiotjänst's development: the right of parties to veto a broadcast by withdrawing their participation. It was the breaking of this principle which is covered in the next section.

The principles which were being developed in Radiotjänst were thus sufficient to ensure that, even if newsmen and programme presenters were being recruited from partisan environments, their final output was unlikely to be partisan, since so heavily constrained by the *referat*-style and certain other rules applying to programmes more generally. Nevertheless, the first Radiotjänst journalists and current affairs programme presenters were not drawn from journalism, partisan or otherwise. Only 6 of the program-workers in 1936 had previous experience in journalism (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 100). Far from being *murvar*, or common hacks, they were instead disproportionately likely to be academics: three-quarters of all programme-workers in 1945 had a higher degree.

When, however, journalists who had been active in the party press were recruited to Radiotjänst, opposition within the company was strong, precisely because it was feared that such recruits might pursue the same kind of partisan journalism that they had practiced at their previous employer. Lars-Åke Engblom, in his book on recruitment to Sveriges Radio and Sveriges Television (Engblom, 1998), cites two cases in which the board split on appointments of programme-workers. In the first case, Erik Hjalmar Linder was appointed as head of the talks division by a 5-2 vote; opposition to Linder's candidacy came from those who wanted someone closer to the labour movement dealing

with talks; in the second case, Sven Jerstedt was proposed as labour market reporter; in a choice between Jerstedt and another candidate, Jerstedt won a bare majority of the seven votes (Engblom, 1998, pp. 46-47, 60). Jerstedt had been controversial because he had previously worked on a Social Democratic newspaper, *Lantarbetaren* [The Farmhand]; his nomination led to a complaint from the internal trade union, the RTF. Conversely, Olof Forsén was appointed as the head of the Current Affairs division unanimously: although Forsén had previous journalistic experience, the *Göteborg-Tidningen* had no particular political colouring.

Nevertheless, Radiotjänst's strategy of relying on TT for its news was self-limiting; the company had moreover built up a sufficient reputation that it could begin to build up its own reputation. The first break with TT's monopoly supply of news came through over-enthusiasm when Gunnar Helén reported news of Hitler's death. Understandably, given the circumstances, Helén's reporting brought no official consequences, and Radiotjänst began to build up its own news-team (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 76).

10.2 SVERIGES RADIO 1955 - 1975

In 1957, Radiotjänst changed name and became Sveriges Radio. The change of name came at an important time for the company. Under the duopoly of managing director Erik Mattson and radio-chief Elof Ehnmark, the company had drifted. The appointment, in the same year, of Olof Rydbeck as both managing director and radiochief signalled a new start for the company. During his 13 years in charge of the company, Rydbeck laid the conditions for greater journalistic independence through developing rules on programme activity and rigorously defending the need for *opartiskhet*. He shepherded the company through a period of robust growth; yet this growth was to be his undoing, as he lost control over escalating costs and personnel matters. This lack of control - aggravated by well-intentioned decisions in parliament and by the opposition of Rydbeck's successor Otto Nordenskiöld to the advisory committees Rydbeck had established - eventually led to backlash, with the 1978 reorganization of Sveriges Radio into three different program companies, each overseen by now more politicised boards of governors.

Rydbeck was an outsider to Radiotjänst, having previously served in the Foreign Ministry. He had no party affiliation, though his upper-class background led others to suspect that he was no Social Democrat. Nevertheless, his appointment was approved by unanimity on the board, even at the cost of rejecting one candidate, Walter Åmen, who was well-qualified but perceived as too close to the Social Democrats. As Rydbeck put it, "the social democrats didn't wish to 'burn' one of their own on the post of radio chief, and the bourgeois members of the board desired to avoid a social democrat there for entirely different reasons" (Rydbeck, 1990, p. 123).

Perhaps because of his extraneity to journalism and radio, the decision to develop rules governing programming was taken early in 1960, not long after Rydbeck's appointment. A committee was appointed on the 19th March of that year to work out "appropriate rules for radio and television coverage" (Hahr, 1960). The membership of the committee was divided equally between radio news, television news, and the legal department of the company. They began work on a collection of rules, eventually comprising five parts: the company's legal responsibilities (primarily directed at ensuring the company did not commit crimes or unduly influence trials); the company's obligations in soft law (principally obligations of *opartiskhet* (impartiality), truthfulness and public service); journalistic rules (the *publiceringsregler*), rules on advertising or product placement, and finally rules concerning political programmes. These guidelines were approved unanimously by the board on the 15th December (Sveriges Radio AB, 1960, §2).

The impetus for these rules was likely to forestall legislative action by the parliament (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 191). Early that year, the Riksdagen had passed a motion¹⁰⁰ calling for an investigation into SR's legal responsibilities, which were not governed by existing freedom of expression legislation, and the section on legal responsibility was one of the first to be finalised by the committee (Rydbeck, 1960b). Thus, the committee worked under the 'shadow of hierarchy' (Héritier and Eckert, 2007). The more ambitious plan of moving beyond legal responsibility, however, was possible only thanks to prior experience at formulating rules to govern news coverage. The *publiceringsregler* were, essentially, a slightly altered and carefully annotated version of

100 Första Kammaren no. 127, Herr Ollén

the publiceringsregler published by the Publicistklubben, and committee members had met with the Publicistklubben as well as TT and TU (the publishers' association).

These rules contained a set of broad, ordered values which prioritised procedurally fair principles such as impartiality and truthfulness, but which left sufficient room for internal judgements about news-worthiness and appropriateness for the medium so that program workers could defend themselves from criticism by citing their professional judgement. Program workers' autonomy, did not, however, extend to the expression of their own opinions, nor was their professional judgement unsupervised. The more closely rules affected the coverage of politics, the more detailed and automatic they became, at least as they were applied to the principal parties.

The "governing principle" for program activity was *opartiskhet*, described as "of fundamental importance". *Opartiskhet* first meant that SR was not a party to any debates: it had no opinions (although see page 264). The refusal to take opinions implied restrictions on SR employees: whilst criticism of art and literature might be permissible, employees were not supposed to forward opinions outside of those areas. This obligation did not cease upon leaving the Radiohuset: whilst

"in principle it should be stated that the decision on impartiality applies only to employees' activity in their official function and not their engagements outside of the company, it has nevertheless been shown that SR:s impartiality has been called into question with reference to its employees' engagements outside of the company. Such appearances can, insofar as they imply a stand on certain controversial issues, certainly complicate colleagues' work in the company" (*Sveriges Radio AB, 1960, Bil. 1, p. 13*).

Secondly, *opartiskhet* meant that "different opinions may be heard in programmes in order that an appropriate balance be achieved". This was not, however, a commitment to balance in the same sense as the commitment to *pluralismo*, for example, is a commitment to balance. Rather, it is more akin to the BBC's commitment to due impartiality, being moderated in two senses.

The rules first state that *opartiskhet* is not a property of individual programmes, but of programme output in its entirety, citing a 1948 board decision. This means that not all parties to a dispute might be represented in the same program - precisely the issue which has caused an earlier crisis (the so-called "veto rights crisis"). The rules then state that *opartiskhet* should not be considered in isolation, but rather in conjunction with SR's other commitments to truthfulness and "appropriate form". The commitment to truthfulness defeats objections of partiality, for "it is not partial to state the truth". For our purposes, however, the commitment to "appropriate form" is more significant, because it allows criticisms concerning partiality to be met, not with recourse to the facts of the case or the balance of the opinion - facts which can as competently be judged by outsiders as by those inside the company - but rather by reference to the nature of the program, or the requirements of television or radio, principles which those outside the monopoly broadcaster were, almost by definition, unable to contest. (See, for example, the quote on page 270).

The commitment to impartiality was not unbounded. According to the provisions of its agreement with the state, SR was bound to uphold "democratic values". The rules therefore incorporated a styrelsen decision of August 1958, which stated "anti-democratic strands of thought may only in exceptional cases be heard, and any such speeches should not be given the final word".

The more the rules touched on politics, the more detailed they became. The rules make a distinction between coverage during electoral periods and coverage during 'normal' periods. During the former, time in political programmes is divided on an equal basis between parties represented in the Riksdag (thus including the Communist party), whilst during the latter, time was divided according to newsworthiness. Special considerations were, however, taken: following complaints from the bourgeois parties that government ministers were over-represented on current affairs programmes, "SR explained that the government, *qua* government, was newsworthy, yet, to avoid the suspicion of partiality, a rule was nevertheless introduced that the radiochef should be informed if ministers were to appear in programs other than pure newsprogrammes. This rule was in force throughout the 60s" (Thurén, 1997, p. 121). Other finely crafted compromises were also to be found.

Should the parties attempt to depart from these compromises, they would be ignored. A key section in the rules read:

“No consideration should be taken of attempts from those outside the company to influence the selection or production of news on dubious grounds”

Whether this rule was written in order to ensure management that journalists would follow such a rule, or in order to give journalists a quotable rule in order to defend rebuffs to politicians, is unclear. Nevertheless, the rules taken as a whole represent a bargain struck between management and journalists: management is prepared and willing to defend journalism within the company, provided that journalists follow the rules and follow certain procedural rules not related to content which help management to deal with tricky issues (for example, the obligation on journalists to refer issues upwards to their editor or to management in case of doubt over interpretation of the program guidelines; this principle is also to be found in BBC standard operating procedures).

The rules were significant within the company both because of what they represented and because of who stood behind them. Copies of the rules were sent out to all employees and to members of the parliament, and the group behind the drafting of the rules became a power in itself. Board chairman Per Eckerberg, dissatisfied with the board's lack of influence within the company, became concerned about the growing group around the committee, who he "contemptuously and angrily described as "exegetes" (Hansson, 1998, p. 34).

Self-binding

The commitment to *opartiskhet* was a restriction on SR's activity that was sought out by the company itself. By committing both itself and successive governments to ensuring *opartiskhet* in broadcasting, the company was able to better marshal itself to face criticism. Conversely, where this commitment wavered, the company sought to strengthen it. Following the radio law of 1966, the government and SR negotiated a renewal of SR's charter. In early versions

of the charter, there was no mention of the commitment to to *saklighet* ('factualness') and *opartiskhet*, commitments which were found in the radio law. Yet SR lobbied to have these terms repeated in the terms of the charter. The relatively innocuous commitments in the government draft became longer, and more detailed. At the same time, SR pushed to insert qualifications that would allow it to nuance *opartiskhet*, such as the requirement that programmes be "appropriate to the medium".¹⁰¹

The commitments to *opartiskhet* and *saklighet* were useful to SR because they legitimated certain heavy-handed actions on the part of management to curb content - or at least to ensure that producers were mindful of the potential trouble they could encounter. Two examples demonstrate this, one comic, the other less so. The first comes from Tomas Dillén, who recalled that

“when he edited one of Ulvenstam’s debate programs he choose to lock himself in and take the telephone off the hook in order to work

¹⁰¹ The initial government version read:

Programmen skall utformas så att olika åsikter kan framföras och balanseras på ett rättvist sätt. Sakuppgifter och påståenden i ett program skall vara sanna och ämnesval och framställning ta sikta på vad som är väsentligt.

Den enskildes rätt till privatliv skall respekteras.

Felaktig sakuppgift skall utan dröjsmål beriktigas, när det är påkallat. . .

Sveriges Radio suggested a much expanded version, which read:

Programverksamheten skall präglas av opartiskhet och saklighet och av en strävan att se programmen en för medierna lämplig form.

Kravet på opartiskhet innebär bl.a. att olika åsikter får komma till uttryck i programmen, och att berörda eller jämförliga parter blir företrädna på lika grunder. Olika åsikter kan dock få framföras vid skilda tillfällen, förutom att programverksamheten som helhet präglas av balans.

Av kravet på saklighet följer bl.a. att i program framförda sakuppgifter och påståenden skall underkasta noggran kontroll och att ämnesval och framställning tar sikte på vad som kan bedömas som väsentligt.

Den enskildes privatliv skall respekteras därest icke oavvisligt allmänintresse annat kräver.

Felaktig sakuppgift skall beriktigas när det är påkallat. . .

Reglerna om opartiskhet och saklighet bör tillämpas med beaktanade av att en vidsträckt yttrande och informationsfrihet skall råda i rundradion

These changes are found in [Unsgaard](#)

undisturbed. The [director-general] tried to phone him, but couldn't get through. He then sent his driver to the editing room on A1. Suddenly, a note was shoved underneath the door. On it there was a reminder from the radiochefen that the program should be edited in accordance with the charter's decisions on *opartiskhet* and *saklighet*" (Hansson, 1998, p. 170).

The second example is more serious. Rydbeck, dissatisfied with a documentary programme on anti-war protesters, intervened, demanding the removal of certain scenes. When this was not forthcoming, the director of the program was removed. The decision caused a rift between Rydbeck and the unions. Whether Rydbeck felt he needed to justify his actions is unclear; certainly, his letter in response to the unions was extremely dismissive. Nevertheless, he did justify his decision by noting that "responsibility for the application of laws, the charter, and program-rules lies with the management of the company, and the same obviously concerns program policy in general" (Thurén, 1997, p. 128).

Rydbeck also ensured more systematic control over coverage by instituting a daily meeting of news chiefs at 11.45. The meeting had been instituted during the "note crisis" between Finland and Russia; Rydbeck judged that the situation demanded prudence, and asked for a round-up of planned coverage. The crisis was resolved, but the daily meetings remained. These meetings may not have been tremendously useful - each news chief attempted to conceal his key top stories for fear that they would be stolen by the competition - but they ensured Rydbeck's will was felt. "Rydbeck rarely vetoed items - but it happened. When he said no, it was a no without appeal" (Hansson, 1998, p. 238). This heavy-handedness was possible because "Rydbeck learned quickly the rule which distinguishes all good newsmen: criticise internally, but defend the company and its employees to the outside world" (Hansson, 1998, p. 35). He was able to defend the company to the outside world due to the repeated emphasis on *opartiskhet* and good professional judgement, thus making clearer the implicit bargain between management and journalists.

Defending coverage to the political parties

Amongst the files of Sveriges Radio's centralkansliet [director general's office], one finds a number of letters from smaller or new parties seeking party political broadcasts or space on debate programmes. These were politely rejected, on the grounds that the parties had no representation in the Riksdag, and thus did not qualify for participation in political programming during electoral periods. They were, however, promised that their events would be considered for inclusion in regular news coverage should they be newsworthy: in essence, nothing more than SR was already committed to do. Such responses, were, for example, given to the Progress Union [*Framstegsunionen*] and the Skåne-based *Medborgerlig Samling*. The letters defused the issue without necessarily leading to any coverage. Some parties - like the *Vänsterradikala Socialistpartiet* - persisted; these requests were again defused both on technical grounds - the party's failure to register with the Interior Ministry - and on equal-treatment grounds - the party was merely receiving the same treatment as the *Medborgerlig Samling* and *Kristendemokratisk Samling*.

The concerns of larger opposition parties did not involve their presence or absence from news or electoral period coverage, but rather the quantity of time afforded them. The (perceived) lack of screen-time was usually referred to in the opening paragraphs of party leaders' and capillary associations letters' as "a failure of impartiality"; certain letters - for example, a joint letter of the 10th December 1963 - made explicit reference to SR's commitments in its charter. Typical is a joint letter from January 1964 sent by all three secretaries of the centre-right parties (Bertil Ohlin, Gunnar Heckscher and Hansson for the Centerpartiet), complaining about the disproportionate amount of time given over to government spokespersons, especially in television. Rydbeck's seven page response to the letter defended the company in terms of the newsworthiness of the government:

"In news coverage, whether it be mere wire copy, reportage, or such like, the fact that the news service is based on a factual evaluation of news value, those belonging to the government must in practice be given a quantitative "boost" compared to other parties insofar as the number

of appearances on radio and television is concerned. As you well know, a not inessential part of domestic news has its origin in the government... Sveriges Radio's journalistic line in this respect *is the same as that of the press and naturally cannot be otherwise*" (Rydbeck, 1964, emphasis added)

That SR had convinced the bourgeois parties to couch their complaints in terms of *opartiskhet* and *saklighet* - terms which could be easily defended by the company given that the company had comparative advantage in interpreting those terms - is not perhaps surprising. What is more surprising is that in-principle agreement on *opartiskhet* spanned the political spectrum to also include the Communist party, which wrote to Rydbeck later that year complaining about the lack of objectivity in foreign news. Far from contesting the commitments found in the charter, the Västmanlands district party thought the company should go further. "Strict neutrality should be the principle in any commentary" (Västmanlands Kommunistisk Partidistrikt, 1964). Indeed, of all the parties, the Communist party seemed to be the most attentive to the development of SR's rules, perhaps seeing in them a way to avoid discrimination: a letter from party representative CH Hermansson in 1964 references the "printed rules governing programme activity" in addition to commitments to *opartiskhet*, whilst an earlier letter cited a number of board decisions (Hermansson, 1964).

SR's rules served as a justification for the minimal Communist presence on screen and on radio. These rules were in principle neutral, but applied with special bite to the Communist party. Herbert Söderström, in his book *Samhällskritik i radio och tv* (Soderström and Ag, 1962), argues that SR can never formulate clear principles against Communist participation, and so discriminates on other grounds. "The small size of the communist party and its limited political significance is one argument. . . The party's limited involvement in domestic politics is another. . . Herr Hagberg [Communist party chair] votes so often for Herr Erlander [Social Democratic prime minister] that a radio debate would hardly deliver any new points of view if a communist were present" (quoted in Thurén, 1997, p. 156). The communists were perhaps fobbed off one too many times: the party wrote to Rydbeck stating that:

"Rules, in order to have any practical worth, must be clearly formed, so clear that they exclude misunderstandings and incorrect interpretations. The "rules" which Radiotjänst's board has written are formulated so that they can be cited as a defence for any subjective judgement whatsoever" (Sveriges Kommunistiska Parti, 1963)

The complaint is extremely perceptive: the rules were vaguely formulated, but served to soften responses to the political parties, and to conceal the implicit claim that the company was making, that it had the final say in determining the coverage of political parties through its' professional expertise.

The defense of the company's coverage in terms of impartiality and newsworthiness went hand in hand with a rejection of other possible criteria which might allow less room for discretion or professional judgement. Karl-Erik Lundevall signalled the danger to Olof Rydbeck in a letter from 1961 concerning the annual budget debate. The bourgeois parties had complained that they had received insufficient coverage during the annual budget debate: Lundevall wrote to Rydbeck that the complaint should be rejected, since the statistics on screen-time did not bear this out, but noted that

nevertheless we want to have a free hand, and not be bound by any quota rules when it concerns such reportage, and that any eventual reference to the distribution of screen-time across the year should not be presented as a promise of a similar division in another year" (Lundevall, 1961)

Rydbeck was perhaps mindful of Lundevall's warning when, three years later, the opposition parties wrote to request that statistics on the distribution of speaking time be published. They wrote that

"...in order to facilitate the avoidance of a political imbalance it would, in our opinion, be appropriate if Sveriges Radio itself established retrospective statistics concerning different political speakers' time on radio and television, including, naturally, non-political programmes. Even if such statistics do not give an unambiguous judgement, they may be of help in judging

the direction and scope of programmes" (quoted in Rydbeck, 1964)

Rydbeck in his reply attached a previous letter to one of the opposition parties detailing SR's stance, which, after setting out a list of reasons why an account of appearances or time might be misleading, sets out the most important reason, viz., that such an account would limit the company's discretion and thereby its independence:

"In general Sveriges Radio fears that a register [of appearances] of the kind referred to by the *Centerpartiets* national organization... could unintentionally obstruct the recent and (from the point of view of political education and enlightenment) favourable development according to which SR, with the support of the political parties, has been able to exercise, to an ever greater degree, a more newsworthy and independent judgement in the presentation of political material, without thereby neglecting the demand for impartiality" (Rydbeck, 1960a)

Even where criticisms were not made to Rydbeck but to individual program-makers, those within SR could still forestall the criticism by pointing to the radionämnden. At the same time, the principle of referral upwards also extended to referring upwards criticism received from politicians, which fortunately means that the following note of a phone call between Eko chief Per Persson and Folkpartiet leader Bertil Ohlin is found in the centralkansliet archives:

"Herr Ohlin had messaged that he would like me to talk with him. I phoned him around 3 o'clock. He first stated that he wanted to talk about his participation in next Monday's *Utsikt*, which was to be recorded on Friday with him and Erlander. But first - referring to my recent work - have certain assurances concerning the program. That is to say, I had "wilfully and gravely distorted and falsified his questions to Erlander on Dagens Eko on the 6th October..."

I asked whether O[hlin] realised how insulting the accusation that I had wilfully distorted was. Herr O[hlin] pointed out that one can never judge others' intentions. I replied that with or without "intentions", accusations of that type

belonged with the Radionämnden and that I would rather that he filed his complaint with the Eko piece there. Hr. O[hlin] thought that the Radionämnden "wasn't needed", he thought I had good judgement and that I would rather correct my "mistake". I suggested that we relied on the Radionämnden's judgement and refused to further discuss the matter of the Eko piece" (Persson, 1961).

The note is not only a wonderful example of how rules can be used to defuse politicians' complaints: it also indicates the comparative rarity of such attempts to influence programme output. One can hardly imagine that attempts such as Ohlin's would be referred upwards in this manner if they were daily occurrences: the absence of similar letters in the archives is not necessarily evidence that no other attempts were made, but does suggest that the kind of interference seen here was rare during the period in question.

10.3 '68 AND ALL THAT: SVERIGES RADIO AND SVERIGES TELEVISION

In autumn 1966 the Riksdagen gave permission for a second television channel. The channel began work in 1969, slightly later than expected due to the enormous difficulties in hiring enough people to staff the new channel. The speed of the hiring process, and a Riksdag-mandated decentralization of power within the company, led to the influx of more radical journalists and documentary makers who were less willing to follow *opartiskhet*, and less at risk of being sanctioned for failing to do so. This had noticeable differences for content, led to increased complaints, and, ultimately, a tighter grasp on the broadcaster with the reorganization in 1976.

The company needed between 400 - 500 new employees to man the channel (Engblom, 1998, p. 128), or an increase of one-sixth over its current numbers. Yet concern in the parliament about a too uniform approach in SR meant that responsibility for hiring would not be central, but rather that each of the channel directors - Håkan Unsgaard (TV1) and Örjan Wallqvist (TV2) - would be responsible for assembling their teams. This posed a threat to Rydbeck's

self-appointed status as guardian of *opartiskhet*. In a letter to the selection committee, Rydbeck wrote that

"candidates [should] in different ways throughout the assessment be thoroughly tested on their unconditional preparedness to subject themselves to the terms following on from the radio law, charter with the state, and current program rules. If there is any reason to doubt applicants in this respect, they should not be accepted" (Engblom, 1998, p. 132).

And again, in his memoirs,

"It was obviously not on to ask after their political opinions, but there was one question which was put to all candidates, and that was: are you prepared, irrespective of your own views, to respect SR's commitment to *opartiskhet*?... I myself met with various groups after training and put this question to them. I always received a positive answer... but with such a mass recruitment drive at that time a very one-sided balance of opinions within the group could scarcely be avoided" (Rydbeck, 1990, p. 218).

Then-chairman Per Eckerberg was, unusually, in full agreement with Rydbeck on this point:

"The recruiting process was badly handled... Put bluntly, we employed men and women from Stockholm University. In those circles there were certain strange political currents which led to certain peculiar incidents"

By their coy terms, Rydbeck and Eckerberg mean that those recruitment in 1968 were, or were perceived to be, left-wing radicals. According to Hadenius (1998, p. 224), "no one denies that there was a strong element of left sympathizers amongst radio and tv-workers, either amongst those recruited through testing or those recruited through other means". These new employees were certainly *perceived* as left-wing radicals: novelist Jan Guillou famously described the crowd at an anti-Vietnam war demonstration as exiting via two paths: one towards SR, the other towards the Swedish Development Ministry.

This new influx of younger, better-educated and more political employees might have been successfully absorbed by

SR had the company retained its former degree of centralization. But due to the autonomy devolved to the channel directors - and *pari passu* to the individual directors of programme departments - a form of self-selection occurred: younger workers were more likely to move to TV2; TV1 retained older programme workers who were more used to big-budget productions. Within channels, TV2's Current Affairs unit became a magnet for socially engaged documentary makers (Hansson, 1998, p. 172-3). These new employees did not lead radicalization within parts of SR - that role fell to slightly older producers from the 20s, all "good liberals" - but they provided a critical mass for it.

1969 was thus the start of a five year long debate on *vänstervändning* [the left turn] within SR (Hadenius, 1998, p. 245). The company found it difficult to defend itself against accusations that it was being partial because (a) it did not have the means to control the new elements within the company, (b) and because these new elements themselves called into question the policies of *opartiskhet* and procedural rules which had shielded the company from criticism. The head of TV2's current affairs department, Roland Hjelte, wrote in a 1968 book *Tre Ser På TV* (Hjelte *et al.*, 1968) that "objectivity... does not exist", and noted that "the Publicist Club has recently struck from its journalistic guidelines the rule that one should distinguish between news and comment". Whilst Hjelte's comments might have been taken as mere philosophical opposition to the idea of neutrality, other workers within his department were opposed not only in principle, but also to the practice of commitments to *opartiskhet* and *saklighet*, and the institutions which surrounded them. Oloph Hansson cites the following comment from a meeting of the Culture group in TV2 in 1971 as typical:

"It is urgent that we, on all levels, question the prevalent way of looking upon impartiality, where one equivocates between conservative and sometimes very reactionary values, and apolitical, impartial, objectivity. The right balance should be found in the totality of output, and one must anchor this point of view with our viewers, listeners and readers. First, therefore, all opponents - amongst others the radionämnden - must be forced to reevaluate their current perspective" (quoted in Hansson, 1998, p. 201)

Vänstervridning led to a political backlash which limited the company's room for manoeuvre. Yet vänstervridning in itself was not a sign of limited independence, but rather the reverse. Any hope the ruling Social Democrats might have had to fashion the company in their image - the first stirrings of which Rydbeck perceived in the mid-sixties (Rydbeck, 1990, passim) - was futile: programmes like *Från socialism till ökad jämlikhet* (1971) and the satire *Har du hört vad som hänt* (1970/1) were seen as bitter attacks on social democracy from a Communist perspective.

The left turn had effects on coverage, both in its selection and in the words used therein. At the same meeting which provided the above quote, programme workers suggested that the term "employers" [*arbetsutgivare*] be dropped, in favour of the more correct (and Marxist influenced) term "buyers of labour" [*arbetsköpare*] (Hansson, 1998, p. 202). Although radicalism was strongest amongst the Current Affairs and Documentary department, news was also affected by the channel split: workers on TV2's *Rapport* disagreed with the distinction between fact and comment, which had been given official sanction in a 1966 Riksdag proposition. Their mission, as they saw it, was one of "deepening understanding, comment, and analysis" (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 218). Consequently, a gulf developed between news reporting as it was practised by *Aktuellt* (TV1) and *Rapport* (TV2): one estimate from 1973/4 showed that 50 – 60% of items covered were unique to each program (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 234). Differences in content between the two channels led to a board investigation (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 227).

Chairman Per Eckerberg argues that the use of news with commentary - understood as a non-normative but not entirely factual analysis of news items based on the reporters' professional judgement - undermined SR in the eyes of the public, and a fortiori in the eyes of important interest groups.

"One can say that everything went smoothly between SR and public opinion - including SR's owners - until we started having news programmes with commentary. One can date the great row over television in Sweden to that period. Swedes were not used to reporters' opinions coming through in news" (Hansson, 1998, p. 287)

Eckerberg's comments find confirmation in the number of complaints sent to the radionämnden, which rose from 177 in 1968 to 794 five years later. The most common source of complaints were "current affairs and documentary programs" - precisely the area in which the rejection of the principles of *opartiskhet* and *saklighet* was most widespread - and the commonest grounds for complaint were breaches in *opartiskhet* (33%) and *saklighet* (41%) (Djerf-Pierre and Weibull, 2001, p. 266).

The Social Democratic government under Olof Palme had signalled its discontent with Sveriges Radio and its turn to the left when, in 1973, it cut SEK40 million from the company's budget. Interpretations of the motivation for the cut differ: Hadenius (1998, p. 244) argues that it was most likely an aid to newly appointed director-general Otto Nordenskiöld, who had proposed budget cuts of just this magnitude; but also notes that the cuts were "perceived by many within the management of the company as a punishment for *vänstervridning*".

The Social Democrats might have taken more thorough measures had they won the 1976 election. Sveriges Radio's charter was set to expire on the 1st July 1977 (Tjernström, 2000, p. 237), and a committee had been appointed to examine options for the future structure of the company. Surprisingly, after toying with a number of options, the committee recommended that the current organizational form - a common company for both radio and television engaged in both programme creation and transmission - was preferable to dividing the company into independent companies with responsibility for national and local radio and television respectively (the so-called vertical cleavage), or into programme production and transmission companies (the horizontal cleavage). (This option was the company's own preferred position). "The rationale was principally the integrity of the organization - that is to say, its capacity to withstand different types of influence from external sources" (Tjernström, 2000, p. 242).

Yet in the interim the Palme government had fought and lost the 1976 elections, leading to the first non-socialist government in forty years forming under the Center Party's Thorbjörn Fälldin, with Jan-Erik Wikström as Culture minister. "One of [Wikström's] first measures was to take Per Eckerberg off of the board and appoint his own man, the Liberal party member Erik Huss, replaced after a couple of

years by Gunnar Helén". Eckerberg was bitter about what he perceived as punishment for the very same radical turn that he had railed against (Hansson, 1998, p. 374).

Yet board appointments were only a part of the deeper political involvement in SR that was to come. The ministry took the unusual step of rejecting the advice of the radio commission, preferring instead to suggest that SR be split up into separate program companies for each of its current activities - that is, local radio, national radio, educational programming, and television. In its original form, the proposal called for each of these program companies to report directly to the department. Hansson (1998, p. 374), at that time head of the director-general's office, railed against the proposal warning that it would undermine SR's independence; the government eventually adopted the compromise proposal from a Social Democratic member of the Riksdag, that the four programme companies should be united under a single parent company, which would in turn report to the parliament.

The reorganization of the company achieved two things for the bourgeois parties. First, it increased the number of posts within its gift. Although the boards of the daughter companies were in theory appointed by the board of the parent company, these appointments were second-order appointments, in that they merely reflected the political balance of power present at the time the parent board was appointed. An increased number of posts would have been a boon to the bourgeois parties, insofar as it is more difficult to deal out a limited number of posts between three governing parties than it is with one governing (hegemonic) party.

Second, the reorganization meant that a new round of jockeying for power within the company could begin, as old responsibilities were divided and new posts created. Again, the scale of the reorganization meant that the opportunities for influence were much greater than in competition for a single post, where particular candidates often secure the appointment even before its official announcement (compare with Burns, 1977, for the case of the BBC).

Board chairman Erik Huss was called to a meeting with Prime Minister Fälldin, Culture minister Wikström, and Gösta Bohman (leader of the Moderate party), and a number of names were suggested to him. They were interested

in appointments "at all levels", and interest in directors with responsibility for programmes was especially great (Huss). These suggestions had been preceded by a limited number of cross-party consultations: Wikström met with his predecessor as Communications minister, Hans Gustafsson, and with Social Democrat leader Olof Palme, to try and secure a compromise on appointments, and thereby achieve a balance of appointments from across the political spectrum (Hadenius, 1998, p. 270).

I have already discussed the political character of board appointments in Chapter 4, and shown how there was a spike in the partisanship of appointments with the entry of the new government (nella pagina 90); yet executive appointments were also politically tinged. Sam Nilsson, a former party secretary in the Högerparti (now the Moderaterna), became channel director for TV1; Oloph Hansson, "known social democrat", became director for TV2. Magnus Faxén was appointed head of SVT without a clear party political tie (see below), and Britt-Marie Bystedt was appointed head of SR as a generic 'borgerlig' nominee (Bystedt had been active in industry).

At the same time, however, there was limited room for manoeuvre for the political parties. "42 of the 45 newly appointed directors within television were internal" (Hadenius, 1998, p. 271), suggesting that politicians could not impose others from outside. Consequently, the involvement of the political parties in the appointments of different directors was hampered by their limited knowledge of the political orientation of those within SR/SVT. Lacking knowledge of individual candidates' party affiliations, party leaders sometimes imputed party affiliation to their nominees in order to save face. As Wikström said in an interview with Oloph Hansson,

"The Center party had no real candidate in the 1978 round of appointments... PO Sundman rang [Magnus Faxén, later director-general of SVT] on other matters, and then asked him, "you're a Center party supporter, aren't you?" Faxén said no, and the conversation drifted on to other matters. But right before it ended, Sundman said, "Yes, but if I'm going to vote for you tomorrow that means that you're a Center party supporter in any case". That is, he was forced to defend his choice to his party colleagues by

saying that Faxén was a friend to the party"
(Wikström)

Had Faxén come to SR/SVT through the party press, or had the degree of political parallelism in notionally non-affiliated newspapers been higher, it is less likely that party leaders would have had to guess at Faxén's political orientation. Certainly, it is hard to imagine this scenario happening in Italy.

10.4 CONCLUSION

The 1976 split of Sveriges Radio represented the last major *organizational* reform of Swedish public broadcasting. The structures created by the reform – Sveriges Radio, Sveriges Television, and Sveriges Utbildningsradio (Swedish Educational Radio, UR) – continue today, although their legal form has changed over time: in 1993, the three companies were re-constituted as subsidiary units of three different foundations; three years later these foundations were merged to form a single foundation, the *Förvaltningsstiftelsen för Sveriges Radio AB*. It is this parent foundation which appoints the members of the boards of Sveriges Radio and Sveriges Television, and which is in turn appointed by the Riksdag.

The round of nominations which followed the 1976 split also marked the last phase of protracted political debate over SR/SVT. From the eighties onwards, the attention paid to SR/SVT by politicians diminished considerably. This reduced attention is due to several factors. First, the introduction of commercial television in 1992 meant that SVT was no longer a monopoly provider of television news; courting private companies became, particularly for the bourgeois parties, an important alternative to threatening SVT. Second, the decision of commercial competitors to adopt the same content rules and the same complaints referral process (to the *Granskningsnämnden för radio och TV*, the replacement for the *radionämnden*) had the effect of legitimating SVT's existing practices.

Whilst the bourgeois parties have continued to view SVT as inclined to the left, the degree of conflict between the bourgeois parties and the broadcaster is nowhere near as large as it was prior to the organizational reform of the late

seventies. On occasion the bourgeois parties have been embarrassed in their dealings with the public broadcasters, as when the newly appointed culture minister in the Reinfeldt government, Cecilia Stegö Child, was found to have not paid the television licence fee for the past sixteen years.

Equally, the broadcaster has mistepped on occasion. From the time of his appointment as prime minister in 1996 until his retirement ten years later, Göran Persson had granted SVT journalist Erik Fichtelius regular interviews on a deep background basis. These interviews – which were recorded, and subsequently turned into an extremely successful documentary film, *Ordförande Persson* (Chairman Persson) – continued whilst Fichtelius worked as a political commentator on *Aktuellt*. When, in 2002, news of the *Ordförande Persson* project was leaked, Fichtelius and SVT came under heavy criticism. Critics – including the bourgeois parties – alleged that Fichtelius faced a conflict of interests between his interest in continued collaboration with Persson, and his role as an impartial commentator. Fichtelius felt vindicated by the ultimate ratings and sales success of the documentary, but certain of his colleagues insisted that the project had been mistaken from the start.¹⁰² In any case, although the episode did nothing to help relationships between the bourgeois parties and SVT, Fichtelius' career did not slow down after the bourgeois parties returned to government in 2006 – in May 2009 he was appointed managing director for UR.

One might argue that the period following 1976 was calm only because nothing happened to provoke serious conflict between the government and the broadcasters. Sweden, after all, was not involved in the Iraq war, and thus SR/SVT were spared the kind of conflicts faced by the BBC and Danmarks Radio (see chapters 8 and 11). This objection is true, but unhelpful: we only recognize such conflictual episodes because the mechanisms designed to damp down conflict fail in some way, and the argument of this chapter is that SR/SVT's mechanisms to damp down conflict are extremely well-developed. If this argument is true, then even had Sweden participated in the Iraq war, and even if SR/SVT's coverage of Swedish participation had proved to be contentious, SR/SVT might have been better able to

102 Carlbom, Mats, "'Aktuellt'-chef försökte stoppa Fichtelius", *Dagens Nyheter*, 19th March 2007.

prevent and/or minimize the political fall-out than either the BBC or Danmarks Radio.

In summary, the extensive and storied development of rules governing content has been the major concern of this chapter. In this chapter, I have demonstrated

- first, that the market for news in Sweden on a per capita basis – and sometimes even on an absolute basis – was extremely well-advanced compared to other countries in Europe;
- second, that because of this, journalists' associations started quickly, and quickly started efforts at content regulation through the development of *publiceringsregler*;
- third, that these developments were paralleled by the formation of a monopoly national news agency, TT, which set great store in its impartiality
- fourth, that both of these developments were incorporated by the first Swedish public broadcaster, *Radiotjänst*, which sourced all its news from TT and adopted its practices, and which adapted the journalists' association's *publiceringsregler* in order to write its own
- fifth, that the content rules thus developed have been repeatedly cited in communications with politicians to ward off interference
- and sixth, that when Sveriges Radio has got into trouble with politicians, it has been because these rules were not implemented enough and/or openly challenged, as was the case in the run up to the *vänster-
vridning* of the sixties and seventies.

Swedish public broadcasting thus conforms well to our expectations of broadcasting in what Mancini and Hallin label a 'democratic corporatist' system. The subsequent chapter examines to what extent developments in Sweden are mirrored in its neighbour Denmark.

DANMARKS RADIO

11.1 ESTABLISHMENT UNTIL THE FIFTIES (1922 — 1955)

Just as in Sweden, the early impetus for broadcasting in Denmark came from groups of interested amateurs. Unlike Sweden, and in contrast with the United Kingdom or even Ireland, these amateur groups were not quickly displaced by commercial groups. The Danish press, though surprisingly open towards the new medium (see below), was not interested in operating it; nor were other commercial interests — such as radio set manufacturers — viable candidates for broadcasting concessions. As Anker Brink Lund (1976, p. 37) described the situation,

“Private management [of radio] was no real alternative. The independent radio clubs were internally divided, and private industry was still unclear about the economic possibilities of the medium. Involvement in radio was not immediately profitable in 1920s Denmark, and the radio clubs could not therefore find non-risk-averse sources of private start-up capital”

Nevertheless, the prospect that radio clubs might continue to form, and thereby join the existing *Dansk Radioklub* and the *Bindstregsklub* (The Hypen Club) (Skovmand, 1975a, p. 13), was enough to convince the Socialist Minister for Public Works Friis-Skotte that legislative action was necessary, and that nationalization of the nascent radio industry was the only way of avoiding American-style “chaos”: “since so many resourceful individuals... had established their own receiver sets, such that there are now thousands across the land... it must, one way or another, be authorised under a new framework” (Skovmand, 1975a, p. 14).

Figure 11.1: DR timeline

1925	Statsradiofoni established	•
1959	Changes name to Danmarks Radio	•
1964	Decentralization of the broadcaster	•
1980	Board reformed to be more 'professional'	•
1996	Christian Nissen appointed	•
2006	<i>Den Hemmelige Krig</i>	•

The minister thus secured parliament's consent for a temporary nationalization of the radio industry from April 1st 1925 for a period of one year . This transitory arrangement was subsequently made permanent, and the *Statsradiofoni* (State Radio) was formed as a independent public body (*selvstændige offentlige institution*).

In exchange for their consent to nationalization, the listeners' associations were granted representation on the board of the new organization. This representation was granted not just to the pre-existing associations, but also to any new listener associations which might form. This possibility incentivised the formation of new listeners' associations: the Social Democratic-oriented *Arbejdernes Radioforbund* formed in March of 1926, and was followed shortly after by the Christian-inspired *Kristelig Lytterforening* (Brink Lund, 1976, p. 38).

The formation of such listeners' groups, embodying, as they did, thick conceptions of the good, gave the lie to the belief that the Statsradiofoni would be an "apolitical" (*upolitisk*) body. Yet this belief had fared well amongst a sea of ignorance or inadequate foresight on the part of politi-

cians, “since radio until that point had been perceived as a spreader of harmless Talks and Music of an entertaining and educational nature”” (Brink Lund, 1976, p. 37). Indeed, the organization of the new body assumed as much: the director-general of the Transport Ministry stated huffily that “since he would not be a concert leader, it would be necessary to have a board under the ministry, which can organize the programs and take the rap for the choice of music” (Skovmand, 1975a, p. 26; Bild, 1975, p. 199). Consequently, the board (*radioråd*) became not just the highest decision-making organ within the authority, it also developed a number of influential sub-committees — a Programmes Committee (*programudvalg*) and an Administrative Committee (*forretningsudvalg*) — which became executive and not supervisory organs.

The board’s dominance was abetted by the choice of managing director for the station. Emil Holm was a former opera singer who had become program manager for the largest Danish radio club (Skovmand, 1975a, p. 375). He held a minimalist view both of the *Statsradiofoni*’s potential — privileging music over literature and drama, and literature and drama over information and politics — and of his role in it, which was purely administrative (Bild, 1975, p. 201).

The board’s dominance consequently grew with subsequent changes in legislation, which granted political institutions a larger share of the representatives on the board (Skovmand, 1975b, p. 64), and with changes in the standing orders of the body. “Contrary to the organization’s standing orders. . . there were in 1929 two bodies with executive functions: the program committee [of the *råd*], which took care of potential political matter, and the general manger himself, who was primarily concerned with the music program” (Bild, 1975, p. 201), a situation which was subsequently formalised in 1937 with Holm’s departure.

Despite the board’s increased influence, and the formation of politically-inspired listeners’ groups, the new body retained its claim to neutrality. In effect, however, this neutrality lent itself strongly to the politics of the conservative Madsen-Mygdal government of the time. Bindslev, who replaced Friis-Skotte as Transport Minister, unabashedly affirmed this interpretation in the Folketing in a debate of 1927:

“The neutrality which the management of the radio affirms is, — as far as I have understood

it — a neutrality which, if I may say so, aims at protecting the spiritual status quo in the country” (Bild, 1975, p. 197)

The *Statsradiofoni* concurred: when the Socialist listeners’ association requested a talk on the possibility of civil marriage ceremonies, the chairman of the board, Christian Lerche, replied saying that it would not be possible for the *Statsradiofoni* to

“take a broadcast from an association which opposes the Established Church” (Bild, 1975, p. 197)

whilst a previous religious broadcast had included a vicious attack from a church pastor against the very idea of civil marriages.

Incidents such as this have led one author to conclude that

“it is hard to avoid the conclusion that the *Statsradiofoni* during the Madsen-Mygdal period was a true case of state radio, in which freedom in practice lay under narrow boundaries, as decided by the Venstre cabinet’s interpretation of the purpose of radio broadcasting” (Bild, 1975, p. 199)

Some independence was preserved. Social Democratic governments were much more open to the idea of granting the *Statsradiofoni* full responsibility over its output, and Friis-Skotte announced that it was the government’s policy that the *Statsradiofoni*, not the minister, should be responsible for radio broadcasts.

Additionally, the news broadcast by the *Statsradiofoni* was largely unaffected by the decisions of the *radioråd*. Prior to the *Statsradiofoni*’s foundation, broadcast news had been supplied on an ad-hoc basis by three Copenhagen-based newspaper. With the nationalization of radio, the press, through its umbrella organization *Den danske Presses Telegramudvalg*, secured guarantees both from the minister and from the broadcaster itself that it would not only have a monopoly on the provision of news, but would also have the exclusive right to decide which news was broadcast and how. Although news broadcasts in the run-up to the Second World War were occasionally criticised for being too friendly to Nazi Germany (Brink Lund, 1976, p. 60),

the news was not the principal target of politicians' ire. Like the news supplied by TT in Sweden, *Pressens Radioavis* (the name of the broadcast) reported "raw news" without commentary.

11.2 THE FIFTIES UNTIL VÄNSTERVRIDNING (1957 — 1974)

After the war, the influence of the political parties and their associated listeners' associations grew both within and without the broadcaster. This development was not welcomed by DR employees: "it was hardly surprising that the intellectual workers, as they were called at that time, were not entirely delighted to see political and religious organizations take care of their own interests in the new opinion-forming medium" (Nissen, 1975, p. 132; see also the listener association membership figures on p. 117). The rising influence of the listeners' association, and, more generally, the influence of the *råd* over programme output, led to an "insurrection" (*oprør*) on the part of DR employees. In 1957, two individuals — the chairman of the personnel association's negotiating committee Karl Bjarnhof, and the director of the Talks section, Hans Sølvhøj — were deputised to speak to the *råd*. As Nissen writes,

the source of the dissatisfaction, and the two parties' desire for changes, were almost identical. Briefly, there was dissatisfaction with the way in which the Programme Committee involved itself in the organization of individual programmes. This might have been through a thorough read-through of the speakers' manuscript, or through their desire to see the speakers' names in advance of the debate programme" (Nissen, 1975, p. 133).

The 'insurrection' demonstrates two things: first, that the *råd* — the politically appointed part of the broadcaster — exercised a great deal of power within the company, and that it used this power in order to interfere with programme content. Whether this interference was motivated by partisan concerns in a broad or narrow sense we cannot tell from this particular incident, but it is clear that employees did not perceive them as being motivated by concern over the best interests of the company.

Second, the ‘insurrection’ demonstrates the weakness of management relative to the board. Management could not prevent or dissuade employees from circumventing them and presenting their concerns directly to the board; indeed, one of the most senior division chiefs (Sølvhøj) was making the case. Presumably employees did not believe that management was capable or willing to wrest power from the board.

Consequently, strong centralized control became identified with interference motivated by concerns external to the company. For such interference to be eliminated or reduced, the company would need to be decentralized, and control given to individual programme workers or division chiefs.

The insurrection was followed by an easing of control: preventive viewing was formally ended in 1959 (Brink Lund, 1976, p. 40), and there was a thorough going decentralization of power within the broadcaster five years later. Yet the decision to decentralize responsibility was largely pragmatic, and had little to do with employees’ demand for greater freedom: simply put, the råd did not have enough time to oversee the company’s increasing output (Bild, 1975, p. 232). In decentralizing, however, the råd did not grant authority to the director-general; rather, authority was devolved directly from the råd to the programchiefs.

The decentralization of 1964 caused severe problems in attributing responsibility within DR. Emblematic both of this and of the cultural changes taking place at this time is the case of Weekend 66, a magazine-style programme which had interviewed sex experts Inge and Sten Hegeler to a predictable chorus of outrage. A majority on the board agreed that DR had made a mistake in broadcasting the program, but the board was divided on the question of where responsibility lay: whether with the Director-General or the program director (Bild, 1975, p. 236). It did not help that the Director-General at the time, Erik Carlsen, was serving in a merely temporary capacity, awaiting the return of Hans Sølvhøj, who had taken leave of the broadcaster between 1964 and 1967 in order to become Culture Minister in the second Krag government (1968–69 *Danmarks Radio*, p. 99).

At the time of the 1964 decentralization, a number of board members recognized that diminished ex ante control at the centre had to be compensated for by the adoption of rules

on the part of programme-makers themselves. “What guarantee was there”, it was asked, “that departments would not take criticism and run with it”? The problem concerned not so much with the news department — which had adopted its own content rules following the end of the agreement with Pressens Radioavis — but the other departments, including those supplying news commentary. Even board members themselves were troubled by their lack of action: Peder Nørgaard admitted that whilst the board’s statement of general principles was “adequate”, he had assumed when agreeing to decentralization that the report implied the adoption a “moral codex” to cover all of DR’s departments.

However, as Tage Bild (1975, p. 236) has noted, “this task was not taken up by the board. In practice the program committee’s post hoc criticism found success through more or less causal and superficial remarks on individual programmes. It was hard to see what general principles could be drawn from these rather loose discussions”. The board’s inability to develop general principles is unsurprising given that in general it met only once a month; the develop of general principles has, in other broadcasters, been the preserve of management, which has outlined general principles which have subsequently been ratified by the board. Given, however, the decentralization at work, and the strong influence of the individual departments, management’s input into these discussions was minimal.

Even had the board adopted general principles — or some sort of moral codex — it might have had difficulty in getting it accepted by employees due to the growing mutual distrust between these two groups. Board members continued to behave “like politicians as much as like board members” (Bild, 1975, p. 219) — including voicing their concerns outside the broadcaster, to the detriment of relationships within the broadcaster. Remarks like those of board member Svend Aage Olsen, who complained about certain unnamed circles within the ranks of the producers, cannot have helped relationships between the board and the programme-makers (Bild, 1975, p. 238).

In truth, it is not even certain that a call to general principle would have helped the board in reining in programme-makers. The most important regulatory value for Denmark’s Radio at the time was the value of *alsidighed*, the

literal translation of which is “the property of being many-sided”, but which can also be translated as “balanced” or “varied”. The law concerning Danmarks Radio has always included a demand for *alsidighed*, but the demand has never been clearly articulated. Moreover the concept of *alsidighed* has never been clearly articulated even by Danmarks Radio itself. Willy Johannsen (1975) has, in an excellent contribution to the debate, shown that the concept of *alsidighed* was only ever treated by the board in a cursory way, and with much confusion:

“*alsidig* and neutral were often used in the same fashion, when what was meant was, for example, that a broadcast should not have a particular political slant” (Johannsen, 1975, p. 258)

Absent a strong and convincing interpretation of *alsidighed* on the part of Danmarks Radio, it was left to the politicians to set the terms of the debate. Here, however, differences of interpretation developed. In general, politicians on the left argued for an expansive interpretation of *alsidighed* as involving a duty to represent all strands of debate present in society. In more expansive interpretations still, this duty required the broadcaster not merely to permit all strands of debate to broadcast, but to seek them out. A moderate interpretation of *alsidighed* was given by Social Democrat minister Julius Bomholt in the nineteen-fifties:

“It is here that the *Statsradiofoni*’s biggest intellectual challenge lies: to bring in entirely different outlooks on life, entirely different constellations of values, into daily life, and thereby show that there is another world outside the window” (Johannsen, 1975, p. 249).

A more expansive interpretation was given by Morten Lange, member of the Socialist People’s Party:

“In being *alsidig*, Danmarks Radio has a duty to bring about a renewal” (Johannsen, 1975, p. 250)

Conversely, members of conservative parties argued, first, against the active search for minority opinions, which would represent a gift to extremists of all stripes (“It certainly can be *alsidig*, but it must be at a certain level. The

one-sided, the fanatics, the agitators — these one has to look out for. One wouldn't simply invite into your home any agitator who happened to pass by", as M. Hartling (Venstre) put it: [Johannsen, 1975](#), p. 249), and second, for an interpretation of *alsidighed* as representing views in proportion to their uptake in the population. The classic exponent of this view was Erhard Jacobsen, who initially started as a Social Democratic politician only to move to the centre over the course of his political career. Jacobsen in a parliamentary debate started his contributing by quoting the Director-General Hans Sølvhøj's statement that "no interpretation or position should be excluded", and continuing by stating that this led directly to the main question, "in what relation the different interpretations and positions should be presented on radio and television". "He gave the statistics that, according to him, 80 - 90% of the population was happy with the role of the monarchy, with NATO, civil defence and the home guard, the scout movement, religious services, trade unionism and other things, old Danish folk music, and much much more" and that DR should represent this" ([Johannsen, 1975](#), p. 252).

Jacobsen believed that many of the programmes broadcast by DR were influenced by radical left elements within the workforce, and although he cited 'majority opinion' in defence of his arguments, his concerns about Danmarks Radio were typically minority concerns: a 1967 survey of viewers showed that 53% of respondents believed radio and TV coverage in the field of domestic politics to be truthful and impartial, whilst 11% noted a left orientation, 5% a right orientation, and 31% took no position on the matter ([Danmarks Radio, 1967](#)).

At the same time, however, there was concern even amongst board members who did not share Jacobsen's cultural outlook. Their concern was concretized in a plea from Bernhard Baunsgaard to program directors — in particular those in children's programming — to consider the effects of trying to expand the boundaries of the possible:

Board member Bernhard Baunsgaard appealed to program directors to understand "what is at play. If one oversteps certain boundaries, one may create a situation whereby others step in and change the conditions here". He underlined that he did not want to call for censorship, but — he continued — "there might not be many

more broadcasts before one started to feel a hand around the neck" (*Bild*, 1975, p. 239).

In part, this concern could have been read as a threat — Bernhard Baunsgaard was brother to prime minister Hilmar Baunsgaard, and no doubt the programmes that Jacobsen was concerned about were equally unpalatable to the centre-right government Baunsgaard led. Nevertheless, Bernhard Baunsgaard's comments were prescient, for soon after the Communications minister Kristen Helveg Petersen questioned whether Danmarks Radio's control structures were adequate for the task at hand.

In such a context, the board was forced to take some action, and it did so by reversing many of the decentralizing decisions taken just a decade ago. The centralising reforms of 1971 — 1973 cannot be depicted as a response to pressure purely from the centre-right of the Danish political spectrum, for they were undertaken during periods of both conservative and social democratic government. Nor were they necessarily perceived by workers in party political terms: their opposition was instead opposition towards what they saw as a request

"to give power from themselves and be lorded over in a pyramidal chain of command with the director-general at the top"

Thus,

"referring to the general "democratizing tendency" in society, the program chiefs proposed an array of collective responsibility and management structures" (*Bild*, 1975, p. 240)

The centralization did not, however, represent a return to the status quo ante prior to the decentralization of the early sixties: the *radioråd* had realized that the previous degree of control it had exercised was still untenable for purely practical reasons. The intention of the control was thus that the figure of the director-general should regain power within the organization previously ceded to the *programcheferne*, and that he should have control over the "general policy" of the company (*Bild*, 1975, p. 241).

The survey figures quoted above show that there was no great public concern about the coverage of domestic politics. In part, this may be because the concerns articulated by

Jacobsen and his viewers' and listeners' association were blown out of proportion. In part, it may be because coverage of domestic politics — unlike childrens' programming or dramatic programming — still enjoyed the heritage of a more regulated past. The contract between Danmarks Radio and the national press had been abandoned in 1964 at the same time as the decentralization of the company (Lund, 1975, p. 238), and yet DR did not lose all of the rigour which had applied to the raw news supplied in *Radioavisen*: the company decided to draft its own editorial guidelines [*redaktionelle retningslinier*] to replace those which had previously been drafted and backed by the *Pressens Telegramudvalg*.

These guidelines applied with greater force to the “raw news” broadcast by the organization, in the form of the *Radioavisen* and later the *TV-Avisen*, than to the news commentary found on *Aktuelt Kvarter* (radio) and *Tv-Aktuelt*, a news round-up with commentary. *Aktuelt Kvarter* had initially been authored in collaboration between DR employees and journalists from *Radioavisen*, but the two programmes were split in the 1950s in order that the latter could be perceived as transmitting raw news and raw news only, and thus pristine. (The decision was reversed in the seventies, with *Radioavisen* and *Aktuelt Kvarter* brought together again).

Yet long reliance on the *Pressens Radioavis* had also left the company without the control structures necessary to deal with news in a consistent fashion across media and across programmes. The same internal working group which proposed editorial guidelines to replace those written by the *Pressens Telegramudvalg* also proposed that the different news teams be united under a single news-desk; yet this recommendation was rejected. The decision not to build a central newsdesk was justified “by the management, and by the divisions and the board with the need to create news coverage which was as pluralistic as possible” (Brink Lund, 1976, p. 62).

Consequently, the division within the broadcaster between those who practised “raw news” and those who gave “news commentary and analysis” grew, and led to concern both within the board and within the national daily press. Indeed, an internal report of 1973 described sections of the commentary and analysis section as practising “commit-

ted journalism”, a description shared by numerous board members: for Viggo Knudsen (Radikale):

“in the news commentary the aim was always to have pluralistic, personally argued journalism. We were out on stormy seas with Christian Winther and Frank Oswald, who were often extremely personal in their commentaries and analysis. . .

“A large part of the daily press also viewed these expressions with some skepticism. One feared, amongst other things, that the trustworthiness of the station would be undermined by, for example, ‘Vedel-Petersens red army faction’. The press complained that news analysis didn’t resemble the ‘good old radioavis’, but rather that. . . those of a social-democratic or more left-wing oriented tendencies were often first to come to the microphone” (Brink Lund, 1976, p. 73).

Again, some of this criticism could be perceived as partisan — the partisan balance which had hitherto characterised the Danish press was coming undone, with left oriented newspapers failing, leaving right-wing voices dominant (Siune, 1987). By comparison, DR now appeared as a left-of-centre voice. Once again, the problem led to ministerial attention, with the minister reported as now being

“in her own words, exceptionally angry. It was DR’s Orientering programme which had stuck in her throat. Not without reason. . . It could hardly be doubted that often there were gross and unacceptable cases of manipulation against the good people, be they politicians or others, who came to the microphone” (quoted in Brink Lund, 1976, p. 73)

And thus centralization of the news services followed the more general centralization of 1971 — 1973. In both cases, DR had come under fire and had chosen to respond by centralizing its operation and attempting to ensure greater uniformity of output.

11.3 THE PROFESSIONALIZATION TURN? (1980 —)

The re-centralization of the seventies led to an end to formal hostilities, but low-intensity squabbles over the broadcaster and continued discontent with its politicization continued. This discontent led the Four-Leaf Clover cabinet of Poul Schlüter to reform the broadcaster's governance, abolishing the *radioråd* and replacing it with a board (*bestyrelse*) of eleven members. Abolishing the *radioråd* was supposed to send a signal that politicised management of the broadcaster was at an end; the new *bestyrelse* members were supposed to behave more 'professionally', and in a more business-like fashion: though this may have been an excuse for appointing more members drawn from business circles.¹⁰³ Since these changes are largely dealt with in the chapter concerning appointments, I skip over them here.

The nineties were characterised by two processes: continued centralization of the broadcaster, carried out by director-general Christian Nissen (1996 - 2006), and the continuation of politically-influenced decision-making on the board.

Towards the end of the eighties and in the beginning of the nineties, DR was an effective dyarchy, with power divided between the heads of radio and television services, with a weak coordinating role for the director-general, and news services split between the two media. This division of power within the organization was so extreme that the "Swedish option" of splitting Danmarks Radio into two formally separate entities dealing with radio and television was seriously concerned.

With a tightening of funding in the beginning of the nineties, and the appointment of Christian Nissen as director-general, this course was reversed. In a trope which obviously appeals to those who write on public broadcasters (cf. p. 123), Nissen described Danmarks Radio as

"not a state-within-a-state, as some critics maintained. Far from being a "state", or even a federation, it was closer to a loosely organised empire [*kejserrige*] consisting of highly independent and mutually antagonistic principalities, which in DR were called program divisions" (Nissen, 2007, p. 76)

¹⁰³ Anonymous comment from some members on the *radionaevnet*

Nissen's plan for reform of the broadcaster was initially welcomed (with some reservations from two left-leaning board members), but opposition grew over time, particularly when the merger of radio and television news was concerned.

Internal opposition to centralization was aggravated by the continued political character of board decision-making. The board had divided along party-political lines in appointing Nissen; party-political voting continued in a limited fashion with the labour representative on the board often voting together with the Socialistisk Folkeparti member Preben Sepstrup. Staff members who complained about centralization initiatives made sure that their complaints were circulated also to board members, and in at least one instance a board member may have encouraged head of television programming Hans Jørgen Skov to lobby parliamentarians to return to the "Swedish model" (Nissen, 2007, pp. 71, 97).

Centralization in news was particularly strongly resisted on the basis that radio and television each had their own methods of working and of recounting facts. But although Nissen and the board were in favour of centralization, both of the organization and of news-gathering, Nissen in particular, and the program directors to an even greater extent, were skeptical of board demands for greater written regulation of news:

"The interesting point in this field is that one cannot draft rules of the game which are clear and always-binding. Just as with tax law, for each new rule, two new cracks emerge about which one can have doubts, or which could lead individuals to circumvent the rules. It was more important for me that all program workers should, whilst starting with a limited set of rules, be participants in an ongoing discussion of programme ethics, which could serve as a magnetic north-pole for their inner journalistic compass" (Nissen, 2007, p. 187)

Where such rules did exist, Nissen's approach was hardly marked by caution: Nissen had announced that he would give a case of good red wine to any news-team which brought him to court to represent DR in its reporting

“My rationale for putting up this prize out front was to say to all the news-desks, that whilst we should certainly uphold the press ethics and the law of the land, but that if we didn’t sometimes overstep these lines, we would never know where the boundaries lay” (Nissen, 2007, p. 187).

This view is largely shared by Nissen’s successor as director-general, Kenneth Plummer¹⁰⁴, and by the first director of the unified news department, Lisbeth Knudsen, who had made clear her opposition to the adoption of codified rules and the appointment of a listeners’ and viewers’ editor (Skovbjerg, 2008, p. 197).

Ultimately, the adoption of written rules and some structure with which to apply these rules was forced on the company by a relatively minor incident which nonetheless was a precursor of future developments. In 2003 a documentary program on childcare in the municipality of Morsø was broadcast. The film and soundtrack of the documentary made it appear as if a agency child-care worker had struck a child and that the child had subsequently had to go to hospital. Following complaints to the police about the child-care worker’s conduct, and an official request from the police for the raw footage of the incident (turned down by DR), it transpired that the footage of the blow — off-screen, but clear from the soundtrack — and the footage of the hospital visit had been edited together from two different shots.

The incident led to the codification of DR’s rules on journalistic ethics in the summer of 2003, and the subsequent appointment, one year later, of a viewers’ and listeners’ editor, Jakob Møllerup, a former DR journalist. Møllerup’s appointment was initially resisted, and there was much internal criticism (voiced in the company newsletter *DRåben*) about Møllerup’s mixed roles as both a participant in the drafting and revision of DR’s ethical rules, and as an arbiter of the same rules.¹⁰⁵

Unfortunately (from the point of view of the theory articulated in this thesis), the position of viewers’ and listeners’ editor is not analogous to comparable structures at either the BBC or SVT, largely because the decisions of the viewers’ and listeners’ editor compete with at least two other bodies

¹⁰⁴ Interview with Plummer.

¹⁰⁵ Møllerup has asked that his successor be spared this dual role.

which also reserve the right to judge DR's output: the *Radio- og tv-nævnet*, established in 2001, and the *Pressenævnet*. The former was established in order to ensure that DR and the private TV2 live up to their public service obligations. They are therefore primarily concerned with output in its broadest sense. The *Pressenævnet*, by contrast, is a uniquely Danish compromise — a self-regulatory organ with press representation, established by a law of 1993 (Vignal-Schjøth, 2008, p. 57). The listeners' and viewers' editor has thus felt it necessary to advertise the advantages of directing complaints to him instead of the *Presse* or *Radio- og tv-nævnet*.¹⁰⁶

Ironically, the most controversial item of DR programming was not strictly speaking a news-item, but rather a documentary, *Den Hemmelige Krig* (The Secret War), which alleged that Danish forces had handed Afghan prisoners over to the US Army for interrogation and subsequent torture. The chairman of the Conservative group in the Folketing, Helge Adam Møller, announced an appeal to the *Pressenævnet*, and Danmarks Radio dared prime minister Anders Fogh Rasmussen and defence minister Søren Gade to do likewise, but the matter was never ultimately taken up by the *nævnet*. However, by the time of *Den Hemmelige Krig*, the government's relations with the broadcaster had already deteriorated considerably, particularly concerned coverage of war in Iraq and Afghanistan. In March of 2003, the culture minister Brian Mikkelsen wrote to the chairman of DR's board criticising DR's coverage of the Iraq war, and making crude threats about privatization:

Purely for your information I wanted to note that DR's coverage of the government and especially the Iraq war was on the agenda at cabinet today, first at breakfast with a number ministers and subsequently during the formal meeting. There is very great dissatisfaction with DR's coverage, which is extremely one-sided – many have been especially angry with a number of female hosts and Ole Sippel (who many mentioned as an extreme in his opposition to the coalition). After that the Foreign Minister remarked that we should not privatize TV2, which was fair in its coverage, but rather that we should privatize DR.

106 See, for example, "Møllerup: Flere bruger DRs ankesystem i stedet for Pressenævnet", http://www.dr.dk/0mDR/Lytternes_og_seernes_redaktoer/Klummer/2009/0324103102.htm

It's precisely this argument which is the strongest argument the centre-right has against the privatization of TV2.

Many [members of the right wing parties] think that we ought to privatise DR, which is against the government, and do not understand why we are privatizing TV2, when it has been only positive vis-a-vis the government. I know well that it's difficult for you - today I was in the line of fire for it suddenly became my responsibility - but you needed to be informed about the government's position. I mentioned to the prime minister that I had had a confidential discussion with you about the state of things. And that I had impressions of that the management and Nissen took it very seriously, but the problem lay with Lisbeth Knudsen [director of news] (Nissen, 2007, p. 210)

Continued government dissatisfaction with DR's coverage of the war was one of the reasons suspected in the 2004 dismissal of director-general Christian Nissen. Nissen states in his autobiography of his time at DR that the board gave him no formal reason for his dismissal, but the linkage between DR's coverage of the Iraq war and Nissen's dismissal was made by numerous commentators and raised in the Folketing.¹⁰⁷ Ostensibly Nissen was fired because of cost over-runs concerning DR's new headquarters in the Ørestad district of Copenhagen, but it is known that there was an email exchange between the board vice-chairman, Ersling Aaskov, and culture minister Brian Mikkelsen, the week before the decision.¹⁰⁸

11.4 CONCLUSION

The Danish situation is therefore somewhat paradoxical, because any summary of the chapter must start with two contrary notes: that,

- *despite* a market for news that was (on a per capita basis) comparatively advanced, and

¹⁰⁷ 2004-05, 1. samling - § 20-spørgsmål: Om fyring af DR's generaldirektør Christian Nissen, S. 228, af Søren Søndergaard.

¹⁰⁸ Svar til Spørgsmål nr. S 230.

- *despite* the supply of news from a press consortium functionally analogous to the Tidningarnas Telegrambyrå,
- First, neither Danish journalists as a whole, nor Danmarks Radio have ever adopted thorough-going rules governing output, nor adopted any rhetorical commitments capable of being cashed out in concrete terms;¹⁰⁹
- consequently, complaints initiated by the government are rarely passed through either the *Radio- og tv-nævnet* or the Viewers and Listeners' Editor, meaning that complaints rapidly escalate;
- second, that the absence of thorough-going rules governing output can perhaps be explained by the lack of strong management
- third, that this, in turn, may be a result of the 'solution' to an excessively interfering and political board during the fifties and sixties – namely, excessive decentralization of the company and a split in news reporting between raw factual analysis and more interpretative fare.

Danmarks Radio may therefore be the obverse of the British case. Unlike in Britain, where the absence of leadership from the National Union of Journalists was compensated for by the presence of strong managers like Reith and Hugh Greene, in the Danish case the absence of any readily-adapted codes was compounded by the absence of any strong managerial figure willing to fulfil the demand – already expressed by the *radiatoråd* in the sixties – for some kind of guiding lines capable of protecting the broadcaster.

109 Unless one includes *alsidighed*, which resembles Italian *pluralismo* in its ineffability.

Part IV

CONCLUSIONS

COMPARING THE SIX BROADCASTERS

Chapters 6 through 11 offered the reader concise political histories of the six public service broadcasters studied here. These political histories were not comprehensive: instead, they dedicated special attention to the key concerns of this thesis, namely the recruitment of programme workers, the development of written rules governing content, and the broadcasters' relationship with politics. The reader will hopefully be able to perceive how my argument applies to each of the countries studied in virtue of the facts presented in the country specific chapters. At the same time, however, the need to present information in rough chronological order, and to present background information concerning the respective broadcasters, has obscured the argument somewhat. Here, I present the argument taking the information presented in chapters 6 through 11 as read, though the argument can be followed without having read these chapters.

This chapter is also an opportunity to fulfil the promissory note issued in chapter 3. In that chapter, I developed a statistical model of PSB independence which showed that the independence of the broadcaster depended on the degree of legal independence it enjoyed, and the size of the market for news. I argued there that the size of the market for news was an adequate proxy of the degree of professionalization of the news corps, and that this would have effects on the independence of the broadcaster through the possibilities for the development of written rules concerning output. Having spent much of the preceding chapters describing the state of the market for news, I can now make that argument more concrete. I therefore start with an overview of the various markets for journalism and their degree of professionalization (12.1), before discussing the stock of journalists (12.2) and managers (12.3), before, in the final

section, discussing the development (12.4.1) and deployment (12.4.2) of rules governing content. A summary of the main points can be found in Table 12.1.

12.1 THE MARKET AND PROFESSIONALIZATION

Earlier I argued that a larger market for news would have beneficial effects on the independence of the broadcaster, via its effects on journalistic professionalization and the development of ‘news whole-salers’, or press agencies. We would therefore expect Sweden and the United Kingdom to have the greatest journalistic professionalization and most influential press agencies, followed by Denmark and Ireland, and then by Italy and Spain. This order is roughly correct, although Spanish journalism looks to have overtaken Italian journalism in its professionalization.

12.1.1 *The agencies*

In both the United Kingdom and Sweden, dedicated news agencies obtained a monopoly on the supply of broadcast news. In the British case, this was through a consortium of press agencies; in the Swedish case, through a sole agency, TT. In both cases, the monopoly was insisted upon by the government bureaucracy, conscious of the twin needs to ensure that coverage was impartial and that it was not prejudicial to national security. One of the BBC’s principal contributors, Reuters, had a secret government share with special rights; TT, by contrast, could be relied upon by the Swedish state to be neither pro- nor anti-German, born, as it was, out of a merger of two competing news agencies which had supported opposing sides during the First World War. The need for the agencies to guarantee impartiality was explicitly noted. The Swedish Telegrafstyrelsen judged TT’s participation to be a “guarantee against misuse”; the British Post Office judged the agencies provided “some sort of assurance... of uncoloured news”.

In Denmark and Ireland, news agencies were not so influential. In the Danish case, a monopoly of supply on broadcast news was granted by the government, but it was granted not to the Danish press agency Ritzaus, but to a joint project of several Danish newspapers. Though this

Table 12.1: Comparison of countries

Country	Market for news per capita	Press monopoly on broadcast news?	Internal codes?	Ombudsman or complaints board?	Independence
Sweden	Large	Yes	Yes – from 1960	Yes - from 1933	High
United Kingdom	Large	Yes	Yes – from 1987	Yes – from 1971	High
Ireland	Moderate	No	Yes – from 1989 ^a	No ^c	Moderate
Denmark	Moderate	Yes	Yes – from 2003 ^b	Yes – from 2004	Moderate
Italy	Small	Yes (EIAR); No (Rai)	No	No	Low
Spain	Small	No	No	Yes – from 2007	Low

^a Reference to written codes in RTÉ is a reference to *Broadcasting Guidelines for RTE personnel*, first published 1989.

^b Reference to written codes in DR is a reference to *DR:s programetik: etiske retningslinjer for DRs programmer og medarbejdere*

^c RTÉ has a complaints process, but there is no autonomous complaints unit.

monopoly ultimately turned out to be longer-lasting than the monopolies of the British or the Swedish press agencies, this may have been because of an early disinterest in news, perhaps caused by the appointment of an opera singer as first managing director. Similar disinterest in news was shown in Ireland: this choice, however, may have been *faute de mieux*, as there was no Irish press agency.

Finally, whilst press agencies did exist in Italy and Spain, they were much closer to the state, and did not enjoy a monopoly of supply of broadcast news. Spanish news agency EFE was closely controlled by the same ministry that supervised RTVE; Ansa was more independent, but still subject to government influence through considerable government subsidies.

Consequently, only the BBC and Radiotjänst (and to some extent Denmark's radio) were really in a position to benefit from the kind of shield that sourcing agency news copy provided. This was particularly the case with the BBC, where Reuters' influence extended also to giving advice on the BBC's news style. RTÉ was able to benefit indirectly, through repeating BBC news broadcasts, but neither RTVE nor Rai could have shielded themselves by sourcing news copy exclusively from EFE or ANSA, since this would not have satisfied those who viewed those agencies as closely tied to the regime of the period.

12.1.2 *Professionalization*

As far as professionalization is concerned, whilst it is true that those countries with larger markets for news formed journalists' associations first (see 2.2), it is not obviously the case that there was more professionalization in the UK than in Denmark, or in Ireland than in Spain. Additionally, the impact of professionalization on the broadcaster took different routes in each country.

The clearest case of high circulation leading to early professionalization and subsequent adoption of rules on the part of the broadcaster comes from Sweden. Here, journalists professionalized early, with the explicit aim of maintaining their status, and established rules and a structure by which to arbitrate those rules. Those rules were subsequently

adopted by the broadcaster with the aim of forestalling a legislative intervention by the Parliament.

In the United Kingdom, Denmark and Ireland, the picture was less clear. Here, although journalists unionized, they did not draw up rules to govern their conduct or content; consequently there was no codified expression of the idea that journalists' output should in some way conform to certain rules. Efforts in the United Kingdom (and, a fortiori, in Ireland) to establish a more professional direction for journalism failed. Consequently, expressions of professionalism took less institutional forms, as when groups of like-minded journalists came together to grant journalism a mission or vocation, as was the case with purveyors of analytic journalism in the UK.

Where, however, a limited market did impede the formation of journalists' associations, the state was liable to step in. In the Italian case, this meant the establishment of a journalists' union which granted journalists the objective of the professionalization project – restricted entry to the profession – without the need to first demonstrate the possession of specialised or technical knowledge to the state. Thus, the Order of Journalists not only did nothing to construct written codes governing output (until 1993), but may actually have retarded such a development.

This development was not seen in Spain, despite the Fascist regime having similar ideas about the media. There, the government invested in further education for journalists, resulting in considerable disparities between the Spanish and Italian journalistic corps. That this increased professionalization in Spain has resulted in benefits for the broadcaster can be seen from the experience of the committees which formed to protest against government interference.

12.2 THE JOURNALISTS

Earlier, I claimed that the overall level of partisanship in the journalism of a given country would not necessarily affect the independence of the broadcaster, since normally there would be no incentives for management to select for partisan journalists (other things being equal), whilst there would be incentives to select against such journalists. This, in most countries, was the case. Most obviously, in Sweden,

where numerous newspapers did have clear partisan affiliations, Radiotjänst either recruited journalists from outside journalism with strong academic backgrounds or employed journalists from unaffiliated newspapers, such as Göteborg-Tidningen; where the broadcaster did appoint journalists from affiliated newspapers, there was concern.

Similarly, in Britain, the BBC at first selected from high-quality newspapers and when, from the eighties onwards, those high-quality newspapers also began to manifest a clear editorial line, management switched to recruiting from other newspapers (the influx of Financial Times journalists), or by recruiting internally. The insistence on avoiding recruiting 'engaged' journalists can be seen in the Board of Governors' concern that BBC News should not employ those who 'created' rather than 'reported' news.

As a result, politicians in these countries were very often unsure about the 'true' partisan affiliations of the journalists who covered them: the instinctual Conservative Grace Wyndham Goldie was taken to be a socialist; and Magnus Faxén was imputed a party affiliation when refused to disclose one. More often, however, partisan affiliations were simply not known: directors-general of the BBC could not without risk be assumed to be either Conservative or Labour voters, until Greg Dyke's appointment.

The situation is slightly different in Italy, where the overall level of journalistic partisanship was high both overall and within the broadcaster. Had management had a free choice in hiring, it is difficult to know how they would have circumvented the high level of journalistic partisanship in Italy: the most prudent hiring strategy would probably have involved numerous hires from *Il Sole 24 Ore*, which, despite being owned by Confindustria, does not demonstrate a clear political line. Yet what is important to note is that management has not had a free hand: in the fifties and sixties, agents of the Christian Democrats recruited fellow Christian Democrats from Christian Democratic newspapers; in the sixties and seventies, managers recruited from all political parties in order to maintain political consensus; and in more recent years, managers have perforce been obliged to pick from a limited pool of qualified candidates who, as a result of previous decades' hiring policies, have clearly identifiable partisan affiliations. Thus, although partisanship is high both outside and within Rai, the former has not caused the latter.

12.3 MANAGEMENT

I attributed to management a key role in creating and preserving the independence of the broadcaster. Management was to be an intermediary between politicians on the one hand, capable of defeating or defusing their interventions, and on the other hand, journalists. In order to be a trusted mediator, management had to demonstrate to journalists that the rules that they set would be capable of deflecting criticism. To do so, they had to convince journalists that their tenure in office would not be too short; otherwise, the incentive to the journalist to adapt to the new rules would have an uncertain pay-off. What is clear from the case studies here is that precedents and rules which have stuck have been put in place by long-lasting directors-general; conversely, directors-general or boards which are in office for only short periods cannot hope to set rules which will be followed by journalists.

Thus, figures like Reith, Birt and Rydbeck have been directors-general who have imposed written rules to govern content which have persisted over time; at the same time, they have also been amongst the longest-serving directors-general of their respective organizations. This does not imply that these rules have not been developed outside of periods of rule by 'strong' directors-general, but rather that their initial implementation and any subsequent reinventions of these rules owes much to such strong directors-general.

Conversely, where executives' expected term in office is short, the chance of implementing new rules and having them obeyed in the long-run is slight. This has been the case for Rai, throughout its history. The first post-war Rai board which hailed impartiality and objectivity as its catchphrases (see p. 6.1.2) was, shortly after that acclamation, replaced by a board which was more congenial to the government. The Rai board which was most vocal in its intent to impose new rules on Rai and a new style of journalism – the board of the Professors – failed in its attempts because it was in office for just one year. Although this argument principally applies at the board level, it is true also at the level of director-general. Where there have been long-lived directors-general, such as Ettore Bernabei and Biagio Agnes, rule-development of some limited kind has gone ahead. For Bernabei, this rule development was never formally codified. Agnes, by contrast, did implement some of the first codified documents

establishing a coherent schedule for Rai and a direction for its programming. This reasoning applies with even greater force to RTVE, where the turnover of directors-general has been extremely high, and where the board has had limited powers which preclude it from giving a strategic impetus, even were it to serve in office for a long time.

Between these two extremes, the Irish and Danish broadcasters have never had directors-general which truly marked the respective companies. Directors-general in DR were, until the eighties, heavily reliant on the directors of television and radio respectively; consequently, they lacked the power to push forward rules on their own design. Whilst there was a demand for the board for some kind of codified rule governing content, the board itself was not willing to design such a code nor see through its implementation; the channel directors, in defence of their territory, insisted that each service had special requirements which made the development of unified guidelines for content not advisable.

12.4 RULES

12.4.1 *Rule development*

The link between journalistic professionalization and rule development, and between news agencies and rule development, was a simple one: the management of the PSB was assumed to be more likely to develop rules where journalistic associations or wire agencies had already developed similar rules.

Direct evidence of learning from journalistic associations and wire agencies, however, is limited to three cases: the Swedish case, where Sveriges Radio essentially adopted the rules previously drafted by the Publicistklubben, adapting them to the demands of radio and television and accompanying them with guidance on the legal position of the broadcaster; the Danish case, where the broadcaster was obliged to adopt rules for the Radio-avis and TV-avisen after the involvement of *Den danske Presses Telegramudvalg* ceased; and in the British case, where, at a much earlier stage in the broadcaster's development, Reuters aided the BBC in developing some initial rules for news-reading. Of

these examples, however, only the first gives strong support to my theory, insofar as rules were 'borrowed' quite openly, and were subsequently developed with the intent of protecting the broadcaster from interference. The Danish case is less helpful, since the rules established following the development of Danmarks Radio's own news broadcasts do not seem to have been developed over time, or to have had much impact. The British case is partially relevant, but this episode of learning antedates considerably the much more important waves of rule development which took place in the late thirties and early eighties.

There is one further instance of learning about the beneficial impact of rules: the Irish broadcaster's agreement with the party Whips seems to have been modelled on the similar agreement which held between the BBC and party whips in the UK; here learning took place not between media, but rather between two different countries. This, therefore, hints at an extension to the theory: broadcasters may learn either from journalistic associations, news agencies, or similarly situated broadcasters which are nearby.

12.4.2 *The use of rules*

Despite the paucity of concrete examples of rule transfer or learning between journalistic associations and the broadcaster, we do in fact find greater rule-development in those countries in which we would expect most professionalization: rules were most developed in Sweden and Britain, less developed in Ireland and Denmark, and scarcely developed at all in Spain and in Italy (save for manuals of style). Equally it seems clear that these rules do play the role that theory demands of them in defeating and defusing intervention.

As far as the values of the broadcaster were concerned, both the BBC and Sveriges Radio committed themselves to certain values which were only subsequently written into legal regulations. Thus, the BBC's commitment of impartiality was developed first by the Corporation and only later incorporated into legislative language, and only became binding upon the BBC with the passage of the 1990 Communications Act. The story in Sweden is similar, where Sveriges Radio amended the government's charter proposal to make the requirement of impartiality more demanding,

not less. This strategy of self-binding serves as a highly visible signal to politicians that the broadcaster has rules in place to which it is committed, and from which it could not easily retreated.

Committing oneself to achieve impartiality, or objectivity, is an important signal, and is also very different from committing oneself to achieve pluralism. Objectivity and impartiality belong to a family of journalistic values which imply that content produced will never stray very far from the kind of content which would be produced by an ideal observer. Consequently, by committing themselves to these values, broadcasters signal to politicians something about the way they produce output. Conversely, the commitment to pluralism, whilst it might be observed extremely faithfully, and be extremely demanding of the journalists who uphold it, does not necessarily signal to politicians that content will be of the type produced by an ideal observer, but rather that content will be dependent on the particular viewpoint of those who produce it, and that consequently, different types of content can be achieved by changing the set of journalists who produce that content. More often, however, the commitment to pluralism is a commitment which results *faute de mieux*, as previous commitments to objectivity and/or impartiality are found to be too onerous. (This, I would suggest, is the lesson of chapter 6).

A second strategy which emerges from the historical chapters is that of substituting internal controls for external impositions, or the threat of such. In the Irish case, an external imposition – a ban under Section 31 of coverage of Sinn Féin – was in place, and had already caused much trouble for the broadcaster, as when the Fianna Fáil government dismissed the entire RTÉ Authority in 1973. The external imposition was removed only after the intervention of a sympathetic minister (Michael Higgins) and after the Authority showed Higgins guidelines which it promised to follow were the external imposition to be removed. A similar attempt was made by the BBC when it attempted to substitute the 14-day rule with guidelines that would meet the spirit, if not the letter, of the rule.

More commonly the external imposition is merely mooted. Thus, a proposed motion in the Riksdag to clarify Sveriges Radio's editorial responsibilities, which could potentially have acted as a constraint on the broadcaster, was avoided

by the development, within Sveriges Radio, of a comprehensive set of codes covering the broadcaster's legal responsibilities and its responsibilities in news coverage. Equally, the proposal made to the Annan committee, of a dedicated complaints commission covering both the BBC and the ITV, could have represented another external constraint on the broadcaster – but was again pre-empted by the creation of an internal complaints committee.

Where the creation of new structures follows criticisms of the broadcaster, we can describe these criticisms as having been defused. That is, in such cases, the broadcaster implicitly admits that its output was at fault, but revises structures so as to convince politicians that sanctioning is unnecessary. This, to some degree, was the case with the BBC's guidelines on violence, which followed criticism in the press by the Home Secretary Jim Callaghan. The BBC archives suggest that Callaghan did not wish to sanction the BBC formally, but was instead playing to the gallery; in any case, the revision of written rules was sufficient to “get Callaghan of the hook”.

Defusing strategies, however, are a distinctly second-best solution, since they do require the broadcaster to constrain itself further, even when, as in the Callaghan case, these constraints were carefully calibrated to be as unintrusive as possible. Far better, however, is to defeat complaints by showing that the object of the complaint was in conformity with some rule, and as such is eminently defensible.

The best example of defeating a complaint – and, incidentally, of how to trap politicians in knots – comes from Ireland, following the NFA case. The politicians involved believed that the invite extended to the head of the National Farmers' Association breached the Whips' Agreement – but RTÉ was able to show the politicians that the Agreement did not in fact extend to non-politicians, and thus that they had nothing to object to.

A more recent attempted example at defeating a complaint was given in the chapter on the BBC, where BBC executives attempted to demonstrate that their coverage of the run-up to war was in conformity with their Editorial Guidelines, and thus that the government had nothing to object to. Again, I note that citing this case as an example of defeating may appear strange given that ultimately both the Director-General and the Chair of the BBC were forced to resign over

this same coverage, but I believe that the chapter shows that prior to the suicide of David Kelly, the BBC had succeeded in narrowing down to grounds of disagreement between the broadcaster and the government to minutiae of the Editorial Guidelines; had the much more rigorous scrutiny of the Hutton Inquiry not intervened, the BBC's dogged defence of its coverage might have seemed, or might have continued to seem, principled, or at least sufficiently so to convince the government that their complaints were ultimately counter-productive.

The Hutton case was so protracted because of the considerable passion evoked by the decision to go to war. One of the less easily demonstrated advantages of internal rules and complaints handling procedures is their ability to reduce tempers concerning disputes over broadcast output. Where disagreement breaks out between broadcaster and government, or between the broadcaster and a political party, that disagreement may be of considerable public interest, and may be covered extensively by other media, so as to draw both broadcaster and politician(s) into further controversy and an escalation of contrasting claims, eventually leading to greater risk of sanctioning. Asking that the controversy be adjudicated by an complaints panel set up to adjudicate on the rules followed by the broadcaster can be a method of sidelining the controversy, or at least reducing to a minimum the risk of escalating claim and counterclaim.

Such a strategy was attempted by Danmarks Radio following controversy over the Secret War documentary, but government ministers declined to make a formal complaint; the lack of resolution of this affair, and the subsequent dismissal of Christian Nissen, cast doubts over the degree of independence of Danmarks Radio. Indeed, Danmarks Radio seems, of the four 'northern' broadcasters, to be the broadcaster with the least well-developed body of rules for governing content and for adjudicating disputes. In part, this is predicted by our theory, insofar as the Danish media market was smaller (on a per capita basis) than either the Swedish or British media markets; that the Irish broadcaster should have better developed rules, and should have been able to deploy them already by the nineteen-fifties to defuse political complaints, is not predicted by theory, but is likely to be a positive consequence of RTÉ's (geographic and cultural) proximity to the BBC, and the possibilities for learning from the latter.

Nevertheless, the delay with which DR has developed rules for governing content and arbitrating disputes may have been accentuated by another aspect of Denmark's Radio's history, namely the prolonged absence of a strong central executive capable of imposing rules of this nature. The demand for such rules was frequently expressed by the board of the broadcaster, but the board was not capable either of drafting or of imposing such rules.

This rationale applies with greater force to the two southern broadcasters, Rai and RTVE, which have, in recent years, rarely had chief executives who have enjoyed significant ongoing power within the organization. We would expect these broadcasters to have limited rule-development in any case, such as the low level of professionalization and the ties between the state and news wholesalers, but the limited term-in-office of directors-general makes imposition of such rules much more difficult. It is not that broadcasting executives are unaware of the potential beneficial effects of such rules on independence, as Biagio Agnes' complaint ("Give me a document I can hold on to, and from which I can give instructions" - p. 149) demonstrates. Rather, executives simply did not have the time to implement such rules, and this expectation was diffuse amongst programme-workers.

12.5 CONCLUSION

In this chapter I have briefly demonstrated the chain of processes that leads from the market for news to the greater independence of the public service broadcaster. Not all of the links in this chain are equally well-demonstrated. In particular, although there is an association between greater professionalization and press agency dominance, on the one hand, and greater rule-development on the other hand, this association is not often manifested through concrete examples of broadcasters borrowing or learning from journalistic associations or agencies. It seems at least possible that the impact of professionalization and news agency influence is the kind of process which is not seen in individual events, but is rather one of those processes which is "big, slow-moving, and invisible". In any case, the most proximate link in the chain – the use of rules to defend the broadcaster against attempted intervention – seems well demonstrated, with multiple examples of how broadcasters use such rules both to defeat and to defuse intervention.

CONCLUSION

This thesis began with a theory and associated statistical model, which were corroborated by quantitative measures of independence, market size, and legal protection. Having followed that statistical analysis with more nuanced historical analysis, as well as some comparative statics, it is wise to ask how our prior beliefs, formed on the basis of the statistical model of chapter 3, should be revised in light of the findings of chapters 6 — 11. I start by reassessing my proxy measurement of independence (13.1), and my measure of legal protection (13.2), before examining the causal chain stipulated (13.3). I conclude by looking at the implications of my work for the reform of real-world broadcasters (13.4).

13.1 REASSESSING INDEPENDENCE

Since independence from politics is a scale variable, and since previous literature on central bank independence had found the (political) turnover of chief executives to be a valuable indicator of de facto independence, I constructed a proxy indicator of independence to use in the statistical model of chapter 3. I demonstrated that my indicator has concurrent validity insofar as it matched the results of a limited number of opinion polls, and showed that according to the proxy, the BBC would be more independent than Danmarks Radio, which would be more independent than RTÉ, SVT, Rai, and RTE.

Based on the preceding chapters, it seems that this rank ordering is very approximate. First, the proxy misleadingly suggests that Rai became less politically independent after 1993, when in fact it became more independent: although the reforms implemented within the broadcaster at the beginning of the nineties were only partially successful, they

did considerably reduce the parties' influence over hiring decisions. This suggests either that the proxy over-estimates Rai's independence prior to 1993, or under-estimates Rai's independence after 1993, or both. I suggest that the former is most likely: with the exception of Biagio Agnes, most directors-general between 1975 and 1993 were not strong figures. If they stayed in their job for very long, it was only because the heavily politicised board of that time allowed the political parties to pursue influence through other means, or because of conflict *between* different sources of pressure on the broadcaster. Recall that Agnes continued so long as director-general precisely because the parties could not agree on nominations to the board, leaving the board led by Sergio Zavoli to continue in a caretaker capacity. This incident shows how strong political pressure can coexist with limited turnover, creating misleading values for our proxy.

Second, the position of Danmarks Radio seems to be undeserved. In chapter 3, I noted that whilst 42% of respondents to a British survey judged the BBC to be independent, 38% of respondents to a Danish survey judged Danmarks Radio to be independent, and therefore that Danmarks Radio was likely to be only slightly less independent than the BBC. It seems, however, that the gap between the BBC and Danmarks Radio is slightly more than these figures would suggest. Indeed, given that the poll concerning the BBC was conducted shortly after the Hutton inquiry, and the poll on Danmarks Radio shortly before the firing of Christian Nissen, it seems plausible that public perception of the BBC's independence was slightly depressed, and public perception of Danmarks Radio's independence slightly inflated. Certainly, the extent of political involvement at board level in Danmarks Radio greatly exceeds the political involvement found in the Board of Governors; and whilst directors-general of both organizations were forced to resign shortly after coverage of the Iraq war, in the British case this was achieved only after a judicial inquiry, whilst in the Danish case it was achieved by the board acting alone.

Equally, the position of Danmarks Radio seems unmerited compared to the various Swedish broadcasters. Whilst both Danmarks Radio and Sveriges Radio suffered from a political backlash after episodes of left-wing driven coverage, the structural reform of Sveriges Radio was followed by a dissipation of those tensions; by contrast, the much-vaunted professionalization of Danmarks Radio and the abolition of

the programme council in 1980 has been followed by continued intervention and struggles over DR's programming.

One of the reasons why the figures presented in Table 3.1 may over-estimate DR's independence is that they are calculated on the basis of turnover of the chief executive, and thus on the assumption that the chief executive is the most important individual within the organization, the individual whom any government would wish to appoint in order to direct coverage. Where instead the chief executive is weak, governments may choose to influence the broadcaster by influencing the composition of the board. This does not preclude government-induced changes in the chief executive — and indeed Italy combines high turnover both at board and chief executive level — but does reduce the incentives for it.

The low position of Sveriges Television in the table on p. 60 may result in part from increases in turnover which had little to do with political independence, and more to do with secular changes in the organization relating to the upheaval of the 1976 reforms. Indeed, we say that the independence score for Rai dipped sharply following the reforms of 1993. Whilst Rai's average score over the two periods is merited, and gives a rough indication of its true independence over this period, it may be that in both cases some element of turnover was caused by changes unrelated to the degree of political independence. Consequently, a better proxy of independence would be likely to place the BBC and Sveriges Radio/Sveriges Television close to the top of the ranking, followed by RTÉ and Danmarks Radio, with Rai and RTVE bringing up the rear.

13.2 REASSESSING LEGAL PROTECTION

At the same time as providing a proxy for independence, I constructed an index of legal protection based on previous work on the independence of regulatory agencies. How should this index be revised in the light of the preceding chapters?

First, the index seems comprehensive. In the historical chapters there were no legal means by which politicians intervened in the broadcaster which could have been included in the index. Although in certain instances legal

proceedings and inquiries did provide politicians with an opportunity to chastise the broadcaster, the decision, for example, to hold an inquiry like the Hutton inquiry, cannot easily be incorporated into an index of legal protection that has any pretence to generality.

Second, it seems that the index may be more than comprehensive, and include some index items which are not necessary. Strictly speaking, the evidence of the preceding chapters is not enough to demonstrate that one particular aspect of legal protection does not contribute to independence – politicians always have a variety of legal options to intervene in the broadcaster, and the fact that one legal option for intervening was not used could result either from (a) that option being an irrelevant or ineffective option, or (b) from that option being inferior to other, more effective options. Thus, the fact that governments did not seem to use their power over the licence fee may either mean that control over licence fee funding has no connection to independence, or that governments in these five countries always preferred to use their power of appointment over their power over licence fees. Nevertheless, it seems that in the cases examined here, the power of the purse counts little in explaining the independence of the broadcaster.

Equally, the power to appoint individual to the board of the broadcaster does not explain the broadcaster's independence — or at least not as originally expected. Chapter 4 demonstrates that appointments processes which involve fewer veto players actually result in less partisan boards, despite our expectations to the contrary. Further research on precisely why and where this finding holds is necessary before indices of legal protection could reverse the order of these items; in the meantime it would be wise to avoid including items on appointments — at least as far boards as concerned, since the role of the director-general in many of the cases studied was crucial to the independence of the broadcaster. Indeed, the importance of a strong chief executive is a recurring theme in many of the country chapters. Executives in relatively low-independence broadcasters lament the absence of a single figure capable of uniting the competing fiefdoms of the broadcaster. Whilst the presence of a chief executive is no guarantee of independence, independence for some broadcasters has been attained (to some degree), or consolidated, only with strong chief executives — one thinks, for example, of the beneficial impact of Olof Rydbeck on SR/SVT, or of Ettore Bernabei

on Rai. This connection is no coincidence — only in relatively centralized broadcasters is one likely to get the same coherence of output and same rule-following behaviour that was described in chapter 2 as forestalling politicians' objections to 'partisan' journalism.

13.3 REASSESSING THE CAUSAL CHAIN

In the previous chapter I noted that not all links in the causal chain which runs from the market to news, to the degree of independence, were equally well substantiated. In particular, whilst rules in the broadcaster did develop earlier in countries with larger markets for news, there were few conspicuous examples of borrowing from professional associations or from wire agencies. I have already suggested that this may be because this process was "big, slow-moving, and invisible" – that a bigger market for news creates the conditions for rule-development, but that it does so invisibly. Thus, the presence of powerful press agencies might favour the development of rules within the broadcaster not because of direct transfer, but rather because the *idea* of news produced by these agencies – a product which, in structural terms, is relatively homogeneous, and which in any case deserves to be considered as a commodity rather than as a craft product – percolates through other media organizations, and disposes both journalists and managers to consider journalism as the kind of thing which can be either regulated or, if not regulated, at least guided.

Equally, however, this link might be weakly demonstrated because it relies on an ideal of professionalization which only applies in certain circumstances. That is, the formation of a journalists' association with the primary aim of an increase in status and partial limitations on entry into the profession is quite a specific institutional feature, and may not be universally applicable, for professionalization may take place through other methods. Few would contest that American journalism is highly professionalized, but this professionalization has not taken place through the formation of a single journalists' association; and whilst the American Association of News Editors does produce guidelines on news content, it is hardly these which have shaped the profession.

Ideally, future research would be able to identify the determinants of professionalization *in its different guises*, and identify how these different guises are affected by different contexts. Thus, one relatively easy way to tap the kind of ‘institutionalised’ professionalization we say in Sweden would be to examine the percentage of journalists in each country who are affiliated to a journalists’ union; this figure would presumably depend not only on features specific to the media system, such as the size of the media market, but also to wider features of society, such as the rate of union density overall.

13.4 IMPLICATIONS FOR REFORM

The preceding sections examine the academic validity of my hypothesis. In the real world, however, the only ‘valid’ hypotheses might be those which can be cashed out in terms of real prescriptions for policy. If what I have hypothesised is true, my findings have three principal implications for reform of existing public service broadcasters — that is, for efforts to improve the degree of political independence of low-independence public service broadcasters in established democracies.

First, journalists who wish to increase the degree of independence of the PSB should consider whether their work is regular and consistent in style and form across the broadcaster, or whether instead different journalists would report different stories differently depending on where they sit in the organization. If their work varies in style and form across the broadcaster, they should consider whether this variation is determined by considerations of the medium and the intended audience, or whether instead it would cause politicians to believe that journalists operating within the broadcaster are not reporting events as an impartial spectator would.

If, having concluded that their work does vary across the broadcaster in ways that are not suggested by considerations of medium and intended audience, journalists should consider the adoption of a self-regulatory code, or should in any case display a willingness to accept procedural constraints on their output in exchange for greater independence of the agency as a whole, and a lesser likelihood of arbitrary or partisan hiring decisions in the future.

Second, managers — and in particular the chief executive of the broadcaster — should be aware of the key role they play in reforming the broadcaster, and in acting as a mediator between politicians and journalists. Journalists will be unlikely to accept the kind of constraints on output found, in example, in Editorial Guidelines, without some benefit in exchange. It is the task of the chief executive of the broadcaster to convince journalists that she or he can provide both short-term benefits to journalists, perhaps in terms of an increased investment in training and professional development, as well as guarantee the long-term benefits of increased independence that will result from adherence to procedural constraints on output. Additionally, where journalists have not displayed a movement towards the acceptance of constraints on output, or greater self-regulation, the chief executive should be able to win the consent of journalists for proposed changes. S/he should in all cases guard against the risk that attempts at developing self-regulatory codes on output will be seen as a form of ‘censure’. Managers of the broadcaster must also convince politicians that they enjoy sufficient control over the broadcaster to ensure that self-regulatory codes, once imposed, will be followed; and that subsequent breaches of that code will be treated seriously. Mediating between these two groups is not easy: early breaches of the code, or an impression that the broadcaster is ‘out of control’, may lead the chief executive to sanction journalists in highly visible fashion, and thus further weaken journalists’ incentives to self-regulate. Instead, devices that allow the chief executive to temporize — such as the establishment of committees to consider complaints and subsequently deliver reasoned judgements — will be useful in mediating between the two groups.

Third, politicians who sincerely desire greater independence for the broadcaster should act on that desire and pass legislation granting the broadcaster greater legal protection. In light of the preceding remarks, particular attention should be paid to the term length and possibilities for dismissal of board members and chief executives — only where term lengths are long and (politically-initiated) dismissal is difficult will the difficult mediation act of chief executives be likely to succeed.

Greater legal protection may take different forms in different countries. Considered in abstract, therefore, politicians might readily assent to granting greater legal protection.

Considered concretely, reform efforts may involve the abolition of posts for politicians and the limitation of certain opportunities for interference.

In the case of Italy, reform to grant Rai greater legal protection would likely involve a number of specific measures which have not been addressed either in the most recent reform law (the legge Gasparri), nor in proposals for reform (ddl Gentiloni; *proposta di iniziativa popolare*, senatrice Tana de Zulueta ed altri).

First, effective reform would likely reduce the current excessive degree of parliamentary supervision. This could be achieved either by the abolition of the *Commissione parlamentare per l'indirizzo generale e la vigilanza dei servizi radiotelevisivi* (CPIV) or by the elimination of the majority of functions assigned to it by law 103/75, which, despite having been superseded in other respects, remains the primary normative reference for the committee's work. Those functions which do not directly pertain to Rai — the fourth, fifth, and ninth clauses of article 4, concerning public access programming, party political broadcasts, and misleading advertising respectively — could easily be re-assigned to the parliamentary committee on transport and communications (clauses 4 and 5) and to Agcom (clause 9).

Second, reform would involve a new system of appointing board members. (This would be necessary if the parliamentary committee were abolished, since it currently appoints seven of the nine board members and ratifies the two remaining choices). The current system of parliamentary nomination has produced highly partisan Rai boards; chapter 4 has more generally shown that parliamentary nomination is associated with more partisan appointments to multi-member boards, and that nomination by the executive is associated with less partisan appointments.

Nomination of Rai board members by the government is probably unwise and perhaps unconstitutional in the Italian case. The Constitutional Court has repeatedly underlined that the management of Rai should not reflect the influence of the executive. Nomination could therefore only be carried out by other quasi-governmental office holders. One option would be to return to the system of nomination used between 1993 and 2004, where board members were nominated by joint decision of the presidents of the

two chambers. This system — also used for the competition watchdog — could be complemented by parliamentary *ratification* of these nominations, should some form of parliamentary involvement be held desirable.

Third, reform of the system of appointment of board members should be accompanied by an increase in the length of term. Members of the board of the competition watchdog are appointed for a seven-year, non-renewable term; the same would lessen the likelihood that the PSB's managerial cycle and the politico-electoral cycle would overlap.

Fourth, the system used for appointing the director-general should also be changed. Currently the Treasury, as majority share-holder in Rai, ratifies the board's choice of director-general; in practice, this leads to extensive ministerial 'soundings' prior to the choice. If the current company structure of Rai as a *società per azioni* is to be preserved, the Treasury should pre-commit itself to approving the board's choice. If not, and to the extent compatible with the civil code, the choice of director-general should be the exclusive competence of the board. The director-general's term should also be increased in line with the board's.

13.5 CONTINUED RELEVANCE

These recommendations are only worth noting if public service broadcasters, as institutions, have a future in the long-term. There have, however, been repeated predictions that public service broadcasting is 'dying' — either because its ethos is being chipped away at, or because the specific broadcasters who carry it out cannot compete in a multi-channel, multi-media environment.

In 2001, a number of contributors to OpenDemocracy.net¹¹⁰ — largely drawn from the UK — discussed the merits of public service broadcasting (PSB), compared explicitly against the market and implicitly against some ideal broadcasting service which delivers just the right amount of merit goods. The key questions were normative — ought PSB exist, and ought it to be funded in the way it currently is funded — but relied on empirical judgements about the extent to which PSBs fulfilled the normative goals set out for them:

¹¹⁰ "Public service futures", at <http://www.opendemocracy.net/media-publicservice/issue.jsp>

variously, providing diverse and meritorious programming which is capable of contributing to pluralistic democratic debate within the broader public sphere.

The most pungent contribution came from David [Elstein \(2001\)](#), who argued that the market was capable of fulfilling these normative functions. The two strands of his argument were (1) that during the period of moderate competition in the UK media market in the second half of the twentieth century, private suppliers - ITV - made programming of high quality, including high quality news and current affairs, and (2) that, in any event, the end of spectrum scarcity means that diversity and pluralism will be secured even better in the future by new private entrants. Consequently, the normative justification for public service broadcasting - or at least, publicly funded broadcasting - is no longer operative, and public funding for the BBC should dry up.

I do not share Elstein's optimism about the capacity of private suppliers to supply large amounts of merit programming; but I think that even if his argument were correct, the policy prescriptions he seeks would not be forthcoming. Politicians - perhaps because they are avid consumers of one of the most obvious types of merit programming, news and current affairs - have not been willing to tolerate gradual elimination of PSBs. Even in those countries where the public service broadcasters have most manifestly failed their remit, in Italy and Spain, governments have been willing to refinance these broadcasters, at some considerable cost to their Treasuries, at times of difficulty (1993 and 2006 respectively).

It might be thought instead that funding for PSB is contingent on continued high audience share and high audience reach, with PSBs who fall below a certain percentage share condemned to ghettoization and reduced funding streams. If this is the case, the technological developments noted by Elstein may represent a problem for PSBs. If each additional entrant into the television market reduces PSB share and/or reach by a certain amount (even if the marginal amount is constantly decreasing), will the PSB still retain sufficient share or reach to command a claim to public finances? Or, if new means of communication reduce the relevance of television as part of overall media consumption, will PSBs claim a large enough share of this broader media market to lobby successfully for continued public funding?

If, as I believe, the continued rude health of PSB depends more on these more prosaic and measurable features of the media market than on notions of quality and the provision of merit goods, what are the current facts regarding PSB audience share?

First, when people want news and information, they turn to television. From Eurobarometer surveys, we know that 70% of people in the EU15 watch television news every day. That's more than the 41% of people who read a newspaper every day. When people actively look for information on politics in the EU, for example, television is cited as the most commonly used source by 65% - 73% of respondents; newspapers and radio still edge out the internet, and the gap remains several percentage points.

We also know that, when they turn to television, people still turn to public service broadcasters. The European Audiovisual Observatory (2002, 2006) publishes data on the audience share of television channels across Europe. Of the 19 PSBs in Old Europe (broadcasters in the EU15, plus Norway and Switzerland, plus linguistic PSBs in Belgium and Switzerland), nine have increased audience share over the period 1995 - 2004; ten have decreased audience share. This is no artefact of the competitiveness of the media market in these countries - increased audience share was found in Germany, Finland, the Netherlands, and Norway, which all have high take-up rates of digital terrestrial and satellite television.

Moreover, PSBs are not losing audience share dramatically. Only four PSBs - Radio e televisao de Portugal (RTP), RTÉ, Sveriges Television and Österreichische Rundfunk - have lost more than one percentage point audience share a year, and only RTP has slipped below the symbolically important 25% figure.

Finally, some PSBs have built up major web portals. The BBC News website is the eighth most visited in the world,¹¹¹ and the second most-visited news site (the first is Fox News). Italian PSB Rai has been less successful: it lags behind other domestic telecoms groups (Telecom Italia; Wind; Kataweb; RCS) but stills beats its commercial competitor Mediaset.

¹¹¹ According to NetCraft (<http://toolbar.netcraft.com/stats/topsites>), and counting all Google national sites as duplicates. Retrieved 29th July 2009.

Consequently, even if internet media consumption is rivalrous with traditional television and/or radio consumption – and evidence on news consumption in the United States suggests that it is not ([Pew Research Center, 2006](#)) – and even if the internet displaces television as the main source of news, then PSBs can still be well placed to meet the threat.



LEGAL SOURCES

- AUSTRIA: 1966 Broadcasting Act
- BELGIUM (Flemish-language community): "Décret relatif a la transformation de la BRTN en une société anonyme de droit public" (29th April 1997) (French-language translation)
- BELGIUM (French language community): "Décret du 14 juillet 1997 portant statut de la Radio-Télévision belge de la Communauté française (RTBF)"
- BULGARIA: the Radio and Television Law of 1998
- CANADA: the 1991 Broadcasting Act
- CHILE: law 19/132 of the 30th March 1992
- CZECH REPUBLIC: 483/1991 Coll., Act of the Czech National Council of 7 November 1991 on Czech Television and (Metykova, 2005, ch. 4)
- DENMARK: law no. 215 of the 11th June 1959, law no. 421 of the 15th June 1973, and law no. 374 of the 10th June 1987
- ESTONIA: the Broadcasting Act of 1994, as amended
- FINLAND: Act on Yleisradio Oy of 1993, as amended
- FRANCE: Loi ordinaire 74-696 du 07/08/1974 relative a la radiodiffusion et television, loi n° 82-652 du 29 juillet 1982 sur la communication audiovisuelle
- GERMANY: Statute of ZDF (April 1962), as amended
- HUNGARY: Act on Radio and Television Broadcasting, act I of 19th May 1996
- ISRAEL: Israel Broadcasting Authority Law, no. 5725 -1965
- JAPAN: the Broadcast Law, no. 132 of 2nd May 1950, as amended
- LATVIA: Radio and Television Law (consolidated)

- LITHUANIA: Law on the National Radio and Television, No I-1571 of October 1996, as amended
- NEW ZEALAND: the Television New Zealand Act 2003
- NORWAY: the Broadcasting Act of 4 Dec. 1992 no. 127, as amended
- POLAND: the Broadcasting Act of the 29th December 1992
- PORTUGAL: the Television Broadcasting Act, Law no. 32/2003
- REPUBLIC OF IRELAND: the Broadcasting Act, 2001; the Broadcasting Act, 1976; the Broadcasting Authority Act, 1960
- ROMANIA: Law no. 41 of June 17 1994, "On the Organization and Operation of the Romanian Broadcasting Corporation and of the Romania Television Corporation"
- SLOVAKIA: the Act on Slovak Television and (Metykova, 2005, ch. 4)
- SLOVENIA: the Law on Radio and Television of 1994
- SOUTH AFRICA: the Broadcasting Act 1999
- SWEDEN: information made available by SVT
- SWITZERLAND: "Statuto della Società svizzera di radiotelevisione (SRG SSR idée suisse)", of 22nd November 1991, as amended
- UNITED KINGDOM: successive Royal Charters and Agreements with the BBC
- UNITED STATES OF AMERICA: the 1967 Public Broadcasting Act, as amended.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- (1967). "Childers sums up Irish television". *The Irish Times*, p. 15.
- (1978). "RTE Authority and trade unions criticised sharply in interim Fogarty report". *The Irish Times*, p. 5.
- Aldridge, Meryl and Evetts, Julia (2003). "Rethinking the concept of professionalism: the case of journalism". *British Journal of Sociology*, **54**(4), 547–564.
- Almond, Gabriel (1956). "Comparative Political Systems". *The Journal of Politics*, **18**(3), 391–409.
- Asor Rosa, Alberto (1981). "Il giornalista: appunti sulla fisiologia di un mestiere difficile". In *Storia d'Italia*, edited by Corrado Vivanti, vol. 4, pp. 1227–1260. Torino: Einaudi.
- Bagge, Gösta, Lundberg, Erik, and Svernilson, Ingvar (eds.) (1935). *Wages in Sweden*, Institute for Social Sciences, University of Stockholm, vol. 2. Stockholm: Norstedt.
- Balassone, Stefano and Guglielmi, Angelo (1995). *Senza rete. Politica e televisione nell'Italia che cambia*. Milano: Rizzoli.
- Banks, Arthur and International, Databanks (2007). *Cross-national Time-series Data Archive*. Databases International.
- Barile, Paolo (1989). "Vecchi e nuovi motivi di incostituzionalità dell'Ordine dei Giornalisti". *Problemi dell'informazione*, **14**(1), 7–17.
- Barnett, Steven, Curry, Andrew, and Chalmers, Alan (1994). *The Battle for the BBC: A British Broadcasting Conspiracy*. London: Aurum Press.
- Bartolini, Stefano (1993). "On Time and Comparative Research". *Journal of Theoretical Politics*, **5**(2), 131.
- Baumgartner, Jody and Morris, Jonathan (2006). "The Daily Show effect: Candidate evaluations, efficacy, and American youth". *American Politics Research*, **34**(3), 341.
- Becchelloni, Giovanni (1991). "Preface". In *L'obiettività giornalistica: un ideale maltratto*. Napoli: Liguori.
- Benn, Tony (1987). *Out of the Wilderness: Diaries 1963-67*. London: Hutchinson.

- Bild, Tage (1975). "Programstyringen i Danmarks Radio". In *DR50*, edited by Roar Skovmand, pp. 195–244. Copenhagen: Danmarks Radio.
- Bischoff, Carina S. (2006). *Political competition and contestability : a study of the barriers to entry in 21 democracies*. Ph.D. thesis, European University Institute, Florence.
- Born, Georgina (2005). *Uncertain Vision: Birt, Dyke, and the reinvention of the BBC*. London: Vintage Books.
- Brancati, Daniela (1988a). "Ai consiglieri Rai i tg e i giornali radio piacciono come sono". *Repubblica*.
- Brancati, Daniela (1988b). "Ora la Rai ha un piano editoriale". *Repubblica*, p. 37.
- Brancati, Daniele (1984). "Ecco la strada per diventare giornalista Rai". *Repubblica*, p. 5.
- Briggs, Asa (1979). *Governing the BBC*. London: BBC.
- Briggs, Asa (1995a). *The Birth of Broadcasting [1896-1927]*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Briggs, Asa (1995b). *The History of Broadcasting in the United Kingdom*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Brink Lund, Anker (1976). *Magten over Danmarks Radio: en analyse specielt med henblik på forholdene omkring lydradioens nyhedsformidling 1970–1976*. Århus: Publimus.
- Bruzzo, Maria Grazia (2007). "Rai, Staderini e Urbani pronti a lasciare il Cda". *La Stampa*, p. 11.
- Budge, Ian, Klingemann, Hans-Dieter, Volkens, Andrea, and Bara, Judith (2001). *Mapping policy preferences : estimates for parties, electors, and governments, 1945-1998*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Budge, Ian, Woldendorp, Jaan, and Keman, Hans (1998). "Party government in 20 Democracies: an update (1990-1995)". *European Journal of Political Research*, 33(1), 125–164.
- Burgelman, Jean-Claude (1989). "Political parties and their impact on public service broadcasting in Belgium". *Media, Culture & Society*, 11(2), 167–193.
- Burns, Tom (1977). *The BBC: Private Institution, Public World*. London: Macmillan.
- Bustamante, Enrique (2007). *Storia della Radio e della Televisione in Spagna (1939–2007)*. ZONE. Roma: Rai-Eri.
- Camera dei Deputati (1961). "Discussione della mozione presentata dal Sen. Pastore ed altri e svolgimento

- dell'interpellanza n. 464 presentata dal Sen. Busoni ed altri".
- Canel, María José and Piqué, Antoni M. (1998). "Journalists in emerging democracies: the case of Spain". In *The Global Journalist*, edited by David M. Weaver. Cresskill, NJ: Hampton Press.
- Cannistraro, Philip (1975). *La fabbrica del consenso*. Roma: Laterza.
- Cardini, Franco and Riccio, Giancarlo (1995). *Il cavallo impazzito. Una stagione di polemiche alla Rai*. Firenze: Giunti.
- Castronovo, Valerio, Giacheri Fossati, Luciana, and Tranfaglia, Nicola (1979). *La stampa italiana nell'eta liberale*. Bari: Laterza.
- Caviglia, Stefano (2001). "Zaccaria: Per Berlusconi un anno da record sul video". *Repubblica*.
- Cesareo, Giovanni (1970). *Anatomia del potere televisivo*. Milano: Franco Angeli.
- Chiarenza, Franco (2002). *Il cavallo morente. Storia della Rai*. Franco Angeli.
- Chondroleou, Georgia (2001). "Policy networks in comparative perspective: Media policy networks in Britain and Greece". Paper presented at the ECPR 2001 General Conference.
- Cipolla, Carlo M. (1969). *Literacy and development in the West*. London: Penguin.
- Collier, David, Seawright, Jason, and Munck, Gerardo L. (2004). *The Quest for Standards: King, Keohane and Verba's Designing Social Inquiry*, pp. 21–50. Oxford: Rowman and Littlefield.
- COMPAS (1999). "Attitudes Toward Broadcast Issues, Canadian Content and the CBC". Survey carried out for the Friends of Canadian Broadcasting. URL <http://www.friends.ca/files/PDF/polls/cbcmay1999.pdf>.
- Coppedge, Michael and Reinicke, Wolfgang H. (1991). "Measuring Polyarchy". In *On Measuring Democracy*, edited by Alex Inkeles, pp. 47–68. New Brunswick, N.J.: Transaction.
- Coppens, Tomas and Saeys, Frieda (2006). "Enforcing performance: new approaches to govern public service broadcasting". *Media, Culture, & Society*, 28(2), 261–284.

- Costner, Herbert L. (1969). "Theory, Deduction, and Rules of Correspondence". *American Journal of Sociology*, 75(2), 245–263.
- Crossman, Richard (1977). *The diaries of a cabinet minister. Vol. 3, Secretary of state for social services 1968-70*. London: Hamish Hamilton.
- CSA and Marianne (2003). "L'image des journalistes et l'objectivité des médias". Available online at <http://www.csa-fr.com/dataset/data2003/opi20030227c.htm>.
- Cukierman, Alex (1992). *Central bank strategy, credibility, and independence : theory and evidence*. Cambridge MA: MIT Press.
- Cukierman, Alex and Webb, S.B. (1995). "Political influence on the Central Bank: International Evidence". *World Bank Economic Review*, 9(3), 397–423.
- Curry, Jane Leftwich (1990). *Poland's Journalists: Professionalism and Politics*. Cambridge University Press.
- Curzi, Alessandro and Mineo, Corradino (1994). *Giù le mani dalla Tv*. Milano: Sperling and Kuper.
- Dahl, Robert Alan (1971). *Polyarchy : participation and opposition*. London: New Haven.
- Danmarks Radio (). "Årbog". København. Various years.
- Danmarks Radio (2006). "Resultat om uafhængighed fra DRs public service image undersøgelse 2006". Personal communication from Bente Hansen, DR.
- Delano, Tony (2002). *The Formation of the British Journalist, 1900 - 2000*. Ph.D. thesis, University of Westminster.
- DellaVigna, Stefano and Kaplan, Ethan (2007). "The Fox News Effect: Media Bias and Voting". *The Quarterly Journal of Economics*, 122(3), 1187–1234.
- Djerf-Pierre, Monika and Weibull, Lennart (2001). *Spegla, granska, tolka. Aktualitetsjournalistik i svensk radio och TV under 1900-talet*. Stockholm: Prisma.
- Dod's Parliamentary Companion (2006). *Dod's Parliamentary Companion*. London: Dod's.
- Donsbach, Wolfgang and Patterson, Thomas (2004). "Political News Journalists: Partisanship, Professionalism, and Political Roles in Five Countries". In *Comparing Political Communication. Theories, Cases, and Challenges*, edited by Frank Esser and Barbara Pfetsch, pp. 251–70. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

- Dowling, Jack, Doolan, Lelia, and Quinn, Bob (1969). *Sit Down and Be Counted : The Cultural Evolution of a Television Station*. Wellington Publishers. RTE.
- Elgemyr, Göran (1996). *Radion i strama tyglar: om Radiotjänsts tillblivelse, teknik och ekonomi 1922-1957*. Stockholm: Norstedt.
- Elgemyr, Göran (2005). *Får jag be om en kommentar? : yttrandefriheten i svensk radio 1925-1960*. Stockholm: Norstedt.
- Elgie, Robert and McMenamain, Iain (2005). "Credible commitment, political uncertainty, or policy complexity? Explaining the discretion granted to Independent Administrative Authorities in France". *British Journal of Political Science*, 35(3), 531–548.
- Elstein, David (2001). "Neither history nor mystery but reality". *OpenDemocracy.net*. URL http://www.opendemocracy.net/media-publicservice/article_49.jsp.
- Engblom, Lars-Åke (1998). *Radio- och TV-folket: rekryteringen av programmedarbetare till radion och televisionen i Sverige 1925-1995*. Stockholm: Stiftelsen Etermedierna i Sverige.
- Erk, Jan (2003). "'Wat We Zelf Doen, Doen We Beter'; Belgian Substate Nationalisms, Congruence and Public Policy". *Journal of Public Policy*, 23, 201–224.
- Etzioni-Halevy, Eva (1987). *National Broadcasting Under Siege: A Comparative Study of Australia, Britain, Israel, and West Germany*. London: Macmillan.
- European Audiovisual Observatory (2002). *Yearbook*. Strasbourg: Council of Europe.
- European Audiovisual Observatory (2006). *Yearbook*. Strasbourg: Council of Europe.
- European Broadcasting Union (2004). *EBU Directory*. European Broadcasting Union.
- Evans, Jocelyn A. (2002). "In Defence of Sartori: Party System Change, Voter Preference Distributions and Other Competitive Incentives". *Party Politics*, 8(2), 155–174.
- Farinelli, Giuseppe, Paccagnini, Ermanno, Santambrogio, Giovanni, and Ida Villa, Angela (1997). *Storia del giornalismo italiano: dalle origini ai giorni nostri*. Torino: UTET.
- Fisher, Desmond (1978). *Broadcasting in Ireland*. Routledge. RTE.
- Fontanarosa, Aldo (1998). "Rai, An torna all' attacco". *Repubblica*, p. 22.

- Fragola, Augusto (1983). *Elementi di diritto della comunicazione sociale*, vol. 1-3. Roma: GEA.
- Freedman, Des (2001). "What use is a public inquiry? Labour and the 1977 Annan Committee on the Future of Broadcasting". *Media, Culture & Society*, 23(2), 195.
- Fuller, Roy (1991). *Spanner and Pen: post-war memories*. London: Sinclair-Stevenson.
- Garnham, Nicholas and Inglis, Fred (1990). *Capitalism and Communication: Global Culture and the Economics of Information*. London: Sage.
- Gentiloni, Paolo (2007). "Linee guida per la riforma della Rai". Available online at www.comunicazioni.it.
- Gilardi, Fabrizio (2002). "Policy Credibility and Delegation to Independent Regulatory Agencies: A Comparative Empirical Analysis". *Journal of European Public Policy*, 9(6), 873–893.
- Gilardi, Fabrizio (2005). "The Formal Independence of Regulators: A Comparison of 17 Countries and 7 Sectors". *Swiss Political Science Review*, 11(4), 139–167.
- Ginsborg, Paul (1990). *A history of contemporary Italy : society and politics, 1943-1988*. London: Penguin Books.
- Ginsborg, Paul (2004). *Silvio Berlusconi : television, power and patrimony*. New York: Verso.
- Glasgow University Media Group (1976). *Bad News*. London: Routledge.
- Glasgow University Media Group (1980). *More Bad News*. London: Routledge.
- Goodin, Robert E. and Klingemann, Hans-Dieter (1998). "Political Science: The Discipline". In *A New Handbook of Political Science*, edited by Robert E. Goodin and Hans-Dieter Klingemann, pp. 3–49. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Gran, Brian and Patterson, Robin (2006). "Law and Weak Links of Independence: A Fuzzy-Sets Analysis of Children's Ombudspersons". Unpublished working paper, Case Western Reserve University.
- Grasso, Aldo (2000). *Storia della televisione*. Milano: Garzanti.
- Greene, Hugh (1969). *The Third Floor Front: A View of Broadcasting in the Sixties*. Oxford: Bodley Head.
- Griffiths, Dennis (2006). *Fleet Street: Five hundred years of the Press*. London: The British Library.

- Grisolia, Maria Cristina and Miacchitella, Carlo (1980). "Il ruolo dell'Ente Regione nell'organizzazione radiotelevisiva: esperienze e prospettive". In *Radiotelevisione pubblica e privata in Italia*, edited by Paolo Barile, Enzo Cheli, and Roberto Zaccaria, pp. 115–144. Bologna: Il Mulino.
- Groseclose, Tim and Milyo, Jeffrey (2005). "A Measure of Media Bias". *Quarterly Journal of Economics*, **120**, 1191–1237.
- Hadenius, Stig (1998). *Kampen om monopolet: Sveriges radio och TV under 1900-talet*. Stockholm: Prisma.
- Hahr, Henrik (1960). "Letter to Olof Rydbeck". SR Arkiv - Kommittén för publiceringsregler: Seriebeteckning F 1; Volym nr 1; T65.
- Hallin, Daniel C. and Mancini, Paolo (2004). *Comparing Media Systems: Three Models of Media and Politics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Hanretty, Chris (2006). *Yes Minister? Political interference in the BBC and RAI, 1996 - 2006*. M.phil, St. Anne's College, University of Oxford.
- Hanretty, Chris (2007a). "Five ways to govern a public service broadcaster". In *DR og TV2 - i folkets tjeneste?*, edited by Martin B. Carstensen, Flemming Svith, and Per Mouritsen. Aarhus: Ajour.
- Hanretty, Chris (2007b). "The Gospel Truths of Italian Media Bias". *Comunicazione Politica*, **8**(1), 31–48.
- Hansson, Oloph (1998). *Intresset ljuger aldrig. Striden om makten i och över Sveriges Radio*. Stockholm: Ekerlids.
- Head, Sydney W. (1985). *World Broadcasting Systems: a comparative analysis*. Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.
- Héritier, Adrienne and Eckert, Sandra (2007). "New Modes of Governance in the Shadow of Hierarchy: Self-regulation by Industry in Europe". *Journal of Public Policy*, **28**(01), 113–138.
- Hermansson, Carl-Henrik (1964). "Letter to Olof Rydbeck". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv. Centrala Kansliet, Handlingar rörande programverksamheten, policyfrågor. F4 CB Vol. 9.
- Hill, Charles (1974). *Behind the Screen*. London: Sidgwick & Jackson.
- Hjelte, Roland, Krantz, Lars, and Torell, Carl (1968). *Tre på TV ser på TV. Ett inlägg om programpolitiken inför TV2*. Uddevalla: Zindermans.

- Ho, Daniel E. and Quinn, Kevin M. (2008). "Measuring Explicit Political Positions of Media". *Quarterly Journal of Political Science*, 3(4), 353–377.
- Horgan, John (2002). *Irish Media: a Critical History since 1922*. Routledge.
- Horgan, John (2004). *Broadcasting and Public Life: RTÉ News and Current Affairs*. Dublin: Four Courts Press.
- Horrie, Chris and Clarke, Steve (1994). *Fuzzy Monsters: Fear and Loathing at the BBC*. Heinemann.
- Høyer, Svennik, Hadenius, Stig, and Weibull, Lennart (1975). *The politics and economics of the press : a developmental perspective*. No. 06-009 in Sage professional papers in contemporary political sociology. London: Sage.
- Høyer, Svennik, Lauk, Epp, and Vihalemm, Peeter (eds.) (1993). *Towards a Civic Society: The Baltic Media's Long Road to Freedom*. Tartu: Baltic Association for Media Research/Nota Baltica.
- Huber, John and Inglehart, Ronald (1995). "Expert Interpretations of Party Space and Party Locations in 42 Societies". *Party Politics*, 1(1), 73–111.
- Huffman, James (1997). *Creating a Public: People and Press in Meiji Japan*. University of Hawaii Press.
- Humphreys, Peter (1996). *Mass Media and Media Policy in Western Europe*. Manchester: Manchester University Press.
- Huss, Erik (). "Interview with Oloph Hansson". Sveriges Radios Dokumentarkiv.
- Hutton, Lord Brian (2004). *Report of the Inquiry into the Circumstances surrounding the death of Dr. David Kelly C.M.G.* The Stationery Office.
- Inglis, Ken and Brazier, Jan (1983). *This is the ABC: The Australian Broadcasting Commission, 1932-1983*. Melbourne University Press.
- International Institute for Management Development (2006). *IMD world competitiveness yearbook 2006*. Lausanne: International Institute for Management Development.
- Iseppi, Franco (1998). *Il ruolo e la missione del servizio pubblico radiotelevisivo e l'etica d'impresa*. Roma: RAI-ERI.
- Istituto Eurisko and Montesi, Maria Pia (1988). "Immagine della RAI". Internal company document.

- Johannsen, Willy (1975). "Alsidighed - hvordan og for hvem?" In *DR50*, edited by Roar Skovmand, pp. 245–280. Copenhagen: Danmarks Radio.
- Johansson, Bengt (2004). "Mass Media, Interpersonal Communication or Personal Experience? Perceptions of Media Effects among Swedish Politicians". *Nordicom Review*, 25(1-2), 259–276.
- Kahneman, Daniel and Tversky, Amos (1982). "Availability: a heuristic for judging frequency and probability". In *Judgement under uncertainty: Heuristics and biases*, edited by Daniel Kahneman, Paul Slovic, and Amos Tversky. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Katz, Richard S and Mair, Peter (1995). "Changing Models of Party Organization and Party Democracy". *Party Politics*, 1(1), 5–28.
- King, Gary, Keohane, Robert O., and Verba, Sidney (1994). *Designing social inquiry: scientific inference in qualitative research*. Princeton University Press.
- Krauss, Ellis (1998). "Changing Television News in Japan". *The Journal of Asian Studies*, 57(3), 663–692.
- Kumar, Krishnan (1975). "Holding the Middle Ground: The BBC, the Public and the Professional Broadcaster". *Sociology*, 9(1), 67.
- Leapman, Michael (1986). *The Last Days of the Beeb*. Allen & Unwin.
- Lerner, Jennifer and Tetlock, Philip E. (1999). "Accounting for the effects of accountability." *Psychological Bulletin*, 125(2), 255–75.
- Lieberman, Evan S. (2005). "Nested Analysis as a Mixed-Method Strategy for Comparative Research". *American Political Science Review*, 99(3), 435–452.
- Lijphart, Arend (1975). *The Politics of Accommodation*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Lindahl, Erik, Dahlgren, Einar, and Kock, Karin (eds.) (1937). *National Income of Sweden 1861-193, Wages, Cost of Living, and National Income in Sweden 1860-1930*, vol. 3. London: King & Son.
- Lloyd, John (2005). *What The Media Are Doing To Our Politics*. London: Constable.
- Locke, Edwin (2000). "Motivation, cognition, and action: An analysis of studies of task goals and knowledge". *Applied Psychology An International Review*, 49(3), 408–429.

- Lund, Erik (1975). "Nyhedsstrukturer og redaktionsprocesser i TVA 1964–1974". In *DR50*, edited by Roar Skovmand, pp. 281–318. Copenhagen: Danmarks Radio.
- Lundevall, Karl-Erik (1961). "Letter to Olof Rydbeck". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv. Centrala Kansliet, Handlingar rörande programverksamheten, policyfrågor. F4 CB, Vol 9.
- Lundström, Gunilla, Rydén, Per, and Sandlund, Elisabeth (2001). *Det moderna Sveriges spegel (1897-1945), Den Svenska pressens historia*, vol. 3. Stockholm: Ekerlids.
- Lusty, Robert (1975). *Bound to be read*. London: Cape.
- MacDonald, Keith (1995). *The Sociology of the Professions*. London: Sage.
- Manca, Enrico (1987). "Agnes è il mio profeta". *Repubblica*, p. 1.
- Mancini, Paolo (2009). *Elogio della lottizzazione*. Bari: Laterza.
- Manin, Bernard (1997). *The Principles of Representative Government*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Marletti, Carlo (1988). "Parties and mass communication: the RAI controversy". *Italian Politics: A Review*, 2, 167–178.
- Matteucci, Nicola, Bobbio, Norberto, and Pasquino, Gianfranco (eds.) (1976). *Dizionario di Politica*. Torino: UTET.
- Mauri, Mario (1984). "Differenze tra le linee editoriali delle testate". In *Rai. La televisione che cambia*, edited by Roberto Zaccaria, pp. 267–275. Torino: Società Editrice Internazionale.
- Mazza, Mauro and Agnes, Biagio (2004). *Mauro Mazza intervista Biagio Agnes : TV: moglie, amante, compagna*. Roma: RAI-ERI.
- Mazzanti, Alessandro (1991). *L'obiettività giornalistica: un ideale maltratto*. Napoli: Liguori.
- McLoone, Martin (1991). "Inventions and Re-imaginings: Some thoughts on Identity and Broadcasting in Ireland". In *Culture, Identity & Broadcasting in Ireland: Local Issues, Global Perspectives*, edited by Martin McLoone, pp. 2–30. Belfast: Institute of Irish Studies.
- McNally, Frank (2002). "Burke intervened 'not in public interest but to serve promoters'". *The Irish Times*, p. 6.
- Metykova, Monika (2005). *Regulating public service broadcasting: The Cases of the Czech Republic, Slovakia and Ireland*. Ph.D. thesis, Masaryk University, Brno.

- Miall, Leonard (1994). *Inside the BBC: British Broadcasting Characters*. London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson.
- Milton, Andrew (2001). "Bound but not gagged: Media Reform in Democratic Transitions". *Comparative Political Studies*, 34(5), 493–526.
- Milton, John (1792). *Aeropagitica; a speech for the liberty of unlicensed printing, to the Parliament of England*. London: R. Blamire, [orig. 1692] edn.
- Moe, Terry M. (1990). "Political Institutions: The Neglected Side of the Story". *Journal of Law, Economics, & Organization*, 6, 213–253.
- Montano, Alicia Gómez (2006). *La manipulación en televisión*. Madrid: Espejo de Tinta.
- Monteleone, Franco (1999). *Storia della radio e della televisione in Italia*. Venezia: Marsilio, 2nd edn.
- MORI (2004). "Quantitative Research to Inform the Preparation of the BBC Charter Review 2004". Report of a Research Study conduct on behalf of the Department for Culture, Media and Sport. URL <http://www.bbccharterreview.org.uk/>.
- Müller-Rommel, Ferdinand, Fettelschoss, Katja, and Harfst, Philipp (2003). "Party government in Central Eastern European democracies: A data collection (1990-2003)". *European Journal of Political Research*, 43(6), 869–894.
- Murialdi, Paolo (1980). "Dalla Liberazione al centrosinistra". In *La stampa italiana dalla Resistenza agli anni Sessanta*, edited by Giovanni De Luna, pp. 169–301. Laterza.
- Murialdi, Paolo (1994). *Maledetti "professori"*. *Diario di un anno alla Rai*. Milano: Rizzoli.
- Musella, Luigi (2007). *Craxi*. Roma: Salerno Editrice.
- n.a. (2008). "Il cda Rai salva Saccà: no al licenziamento". *Repubblica*, p. 8.
- Nilsson, Anders, Pettersson, Lars, and Svensson, Patrick (1999). "Agrarian transition and literacy: The case of nineteenth century Sweden". *European Review of Economic History*, 3(01), 79–96.
- Nissen, Christian S. (2007). *Generalens veje og vildveje: 10 år i Danmarks Radio*. Copenhagen: Gyldendal.
- Nissen, Henrik S. (1975). "Politikere eller kulturpersonligheder". In *DR50*, edited by Roar Skovmand, pp. 115–152. Copenhagen: Danmarks Radio.

- Nordmark, Dag, Johansson, Eric, and Petersson, Birgit (2001). *Åren då allting hände (1830-1897), Den Svenska pressens historia*, vol. 2. Ekerlids.
- Ó Broin, Leon (1976). "The Mantle of Culture". In *Written on the Wind*, pp. 1–16. Dublin: RTÉ.
- Olsson, Olof, Wagnsson, Ruben, Nyblom, Georg, Ljungqvist, Seth, and Reuterswård, Gustaf (1935). "Run-dradion i sverige". *Statens offentliga utredningar*, 1935(10).
- O'Malley, Tom (1994). *Closedown?: the BBC and government broadcasting policy 1979-92*. Pluto Press.
- O'Neill, Barry (1991). "Conflict Moves in Bargaining: Warnings, Threats, Escalations, and Ultimatums". In *Negotiation Analysis*, edited by H. Peyton Young, pp. 87–107. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.
- Orlando, Ruggero (1954). "Letter to Harman Grisewood, Director, BBC Spoken Word". In BBC Written Archives Centre File E1/1008/3.
- Ortoleva, Peppino (1994). "La televisione tra due crisi". In *Storia della stampa italiana*, vol. 7, pp. 89 – 118. Bari: Laterza.
- Ottone, Piero (1969). "Le notizie con la maschera". *Espresso*.
- Ottone, Piero (1996). "Il decalogo del giornalista". *Repubblica*.
- Padovani, Cinzia (2005). *A Fatal Attraction: Public Television and Politics in Italy*. Oxford: Rowman & Littlefield.
- Persson, Per (1961). "Minnesanteckningar från telefonsamtal med Bertil Ohlin". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv. Centrala Kansliet, Handlingar rörande programverksamheten, policyfrågor. F4 CB Vol. 9.
- Petersson, Birgit (2006). *Från journalist till murvel : Journalistyrkets professionalisering från 1900 till 1960-talet*. Nordicom Sverige.
- Pew Research Center (2006). "Maturing Internet News Audience - Broader Than Deep". URL <http://people-press.org/reports/pdf/282.pdf>.
- Picard, Robert (2002). "Assessing Audience Performance of Public Service Broadcasters". *European Journal of Communication*, 17(2), 227–235.
- Pierson, Paul (2003). "Big, Slow-Moving, and...Invisible: Macro-Social Processes in the Study of Comparative

- Politics". In *Comparative Historical Analysis in the Social Sciences*, edited by James Mahoney and Dietrich Rueschmeyer, pp. 177–207. Cambridge University Press.
- Pine, Richard (2002). *2RN and The Origins of Irish Radio*. Dublin: Four Courts Press. RTE.
- Pini, Massimo (1978). *Memorie di un lottizzatore*. Milano: Feltrinelli.
- Pinto, Francesco (1980). *Il modello televisivo : professionalita e politica da Bernabei alla Terza rete*. Milano: Feltrinelli.
- Pollack, Mark A. (2002). "Learning from the Americanists (Again): Theory and Method in the Study of Delegation". *West European Politics*, 25(1), 200–219.
- Porter, Theodore M. (1995). *Trust in Numbers: The Pursuit of Objectivity in Science and Public Life*. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press.
- Putnis, Peter (2008). "Share 999". *Media History*, 14(2), 141–165.
- Qualter, Terence H. (1962). "Politics and Broadcasting: Case Studies of Political Interference in National Broadcasting Systems". *The Canadian Journal of Economics and Political Science / Revue canadienne d'Economie et de Science politique*, 28(2), 225–234.
- Quick, Amanda (ed.) (2003). *World press encyclopedia : a survey of press systems worldwide*. Detroit: Gale.
- Quinn, Bob (2001). *Maverick: A Dissident View of Broadcasting Today*. Brandon Press. RTE.
- Ragin, Charles C. and Becker, Howard S. (eds.) (1992). *What is a case? : exploring the foundations of social inquiry*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Raphael, David Daiches (1973). *The Impartial Spectator*. Oxford University Press.
- Raunio, Tapio and Wiberg, Matti (2003). "Finland: Polarized Pluralism in the Shadow of a Strong President". In *Delegation and Accountability in Parliamentary Democracies*, edited by Kaare Strøm, Wolfgang C. Müller, and Torbjörn Bergman, pp. 301–325. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Reith, John (1924). *Broadcasting Over Britain*. London: Hodder & Stoughton.
- Reith, John (1949). *Into the Wind*. Hodder & Stoughton, London.

- Retallack, James (1993). "From Pariah to Professional? The Journalist in German Society and Politics, from the Late Enlightenment to the Rise of Hitler". *German Studies Review*, **16**(2), 175–223.
- Ricci, Maurizio (1989). "Gelosi, concorrenti, uguali: i tg". *Repubblica*, p. 7.
- Ronchey, Alberto (1988). "Il modello della Rai, pochi pregi, tanti guai". *Repubblica*, p. 10.
- Rumphorst, Werner (1999). "Model Public Service Broadcasting law". UNESCO, Geneva.
- Rydbeck, Olof (1960a). "Letter to Centerpartiets riksförbund". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv. Centrala Kansliet, Handlingar rörande programverksamheten, policyfrågor. F4 CB Vol. 9.
- Rydbeck, Olof (1960b). "Letter to styrelsen". SR Arkiv - Kommittén för publiceringsregler: Seriebeteckning F 1; Volym nr 1; T65.
- Rydbeck, Olof (1964). "Letter to Bertil Ohlin, Gunnar Heckscher, Hansson". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv. Centrala Kansliet, Handlingar rörande programverksamheten, policyfrågor. F4 CB Vol. 9.
- Rydbeck, Olof (1990). *I maktens närhet. Diplomat, radiochef, FN-ämbetsman*. Stockholm: Bonniers.
- Sani, Giacomo and Legnante, Guido (2001). "Quanto ha contato la comunicazione politica?" *Rivista italiana di scienza politica*, (3), 481–502.
- Savage, Robert (1996). *Irish Television : The Political and Social Origins*. Praeger. RTE.
- Sävström, A., Berger, A., Hugo, Ygnve, Hökerberg, Eva, Johansson, Johan, Linder, Erik, and Sterky, Håkan (1946). "Rundradion i Sverige. Dess aktuella behov och riktlinjer för dess framtida verksamhet". *Statens Offentliga Utredningar*, **1946**(1).
- Scannell, P. and Cardiff, D. (1991). *A Social History of British Broadcasting: Volume One 1922-1939, Serving the Nation*. B. Blackwell.
- Scotto Lavina, Enzo (1984). "Il ruolo del palinsesto". In *Rai. La televisione che cambia*. Torino: Società Editrice Internazionale.
- Seaton, Jean (1997). "Yesterday's men". *Contemporary British History*, **11**(2), 87–107.

- Seaton, Jean and Hennessy, Peter (1997). "Reassessing Yesterday's Men". *Contemporary British History*, **10**(3), 87–107.
- Selznick, Philip (1966). *TVA and the Grass Roots: A Study in the Sociology of Formal Organization*. Harper & Row.
- Sigelman, Lee (2009). "Rating the Agencies". URL http://www.themonkeycage.org/2009/03/post_177.html. Blog post at "The Monkey Cage".
- Sigelman, Lee and Yough, Syng Nam (1978). "Left-Right Polarisation in National Party Systems: A Cross-National Analysis". *Comparative Political Studies*, **11**(3), 335–79.
- Simon, Ernest Darwin (1953). *B.B.C. from Within*. London: Victor Gollancz.
- Sinclair, John (1999). *Latin American Television: a Global View*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Siune, Karen (1987). "The Political Role of Mass Media in Scandinavia". *Legislative Studies Quarterly*, **12**(3), 395–414.
- Skovbjerg, Annegrete (2008). "Intern regulering, etik og kontrol". In *Styring eller frihed? Regulering, etik og kontrol*, edited by Oluf Jørgensen, Helle Nissen Kruuse, Annegrete Skovbjerg, and Henriette Vignal-Schjøth, Public service – medier og demokrati, pp. 233–270. Aarhus: Ajour.
- Skovmand, Roar (1975a). "De første år". In *DR50*, edited by Roar Skovmand, pp. 11–50. Copenhagen: Danmarks Radio.
- Skovmand, Roar (1975b). "De ledende kræfter 1926 – 1940". In *DR50*, edited by Roar Skovmand, pp. 51–114. Copenhagen: Danmarks Radio.
- Smith, Anthony and Ortmark, Åke (1979). *Television and political life: studies in six European countries*. Basingstoke: Macmillan.
- Soderström, Herbert and Ag, Lars (1962). *Samhällskritik i radio och tv*. Stockholm: Bonnier.
- Starks, Michael (1981). "Government Review of Broadcasting 1974-81: Outcome and Expectations". *The Political Quarterly*, **52**(4), 467–481.
- Statens Kulturråd and Statistiska Centralbyrån (1981). *Kulturstatistik: verksamhet, ekonomi, kulturvanor 1960-1979*. Stockholm: Statistiska Centralbyrån.
- Sterzel, Fredrik (1971). *God publicistik sed*. Stockholm: Allmänna Förl.

- Sveriges Kommunistiska Parti (1963). "Letter to Olof Rydbeck". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv. Centrala Kansliet, Handlingar rörande programverksamheten, policyfrågor. F4 CB Vol. 9.
- Sveriges Radio AB (1960). "Styrelseprotokoll med bilagor". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv.
- Taylor, David (1975). "Editorial Responsibilities". *BBC Lunchtime Lectures*, **10**, 3–14.
- Thatcher, Margaret (1993). *The Downing Street Years*. London: Harper Collins.
- The Committee on Financing the BBC (1986). *Report of the Committee on Financing the BBC*. Cmd. 9824. London: HMSO.
- Thomas, Nick (2002). "Challenging Myths of the 1960s: The Case of Student Protest in Britain". *Twentieth Century British History*, **13**(3), 277–297.
- Thurén, Torsten (1997). *Medier under blåsväder: den svenska radion och televisionen som samhällsbevarare och samhällskritiker*. Stockholm: Norstedt.
- Tjernström, Sune (2000). *En svårstyrd skuta. Företagsledning i det svenska public service-företaget*. Stockholm: Prisma.
- Tracey, Michael (1998). *The Decline and Fall of Public Service Broadcasting*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Tsebelis, George (2002). *Veto Players: How Political Institutions Work*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Ufficio Stampa della Rai (ed.) (1976). *Pluralismo*. Appunti dell'Ufficio Stampa. Rome: Rai Radiotelevisione Italiana.
- Unsgaard, Håkon (). "Promemoria". SR Arkiv - Kommittén för publiceringsregler: Seriebeteckning F 1; Volym nr 4.
- Various (2005). "Radio och TV I allmänhetens tjänst: Finansiering och skatter". *Statens Offentliga Utredningar*, **2005**(2).
- Västmanlands Kommunistisk Partidistrikt (1964). "Letter to Olof Rydbeck". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv. Centrala Kansliet, Handlingar rörande programverksamheten, policyfrågor. F4 CB Vol. 9.
- Veltroni, Walter (1990). *Io e Berlusconi (e la Rai)*. Roma: Editori riuniti.
- Vespa, Bruno (2002). *Rai: la grande guerra, 1962-2002: quarant'anni di battaglie a viale Mazzini*. Roma: Rai-Eri.

- Vignal-Schjøth, Henriette (2008). "Kontrol og klagesystemer". In *Styring eller frihed? Regulering, etik og kontrol*, edited by Oluf Jørgensen, Helle Nissen Kruuse, Annegrete Skovbjerg, and Henriette Vignal-Schjøth, pp. 233–270. Aarhus: Ajour.
- Volcansek, Mary L. (2000). *Constitutional politics in Italy: the constitutional court*. New York: St. Martin's Press.
- Wadsworth, Alfred Powell (1954). "Newspaper circulations, 1800-1954". *Transactions of the Manchester Statistical Society*, IV, 1–41.
- Weber, Max (1991a). "Bureaucracy". In *From Max Weber: Essays in Sociology*, edited by Hans Heinrich Gerth and Charles Wright Mills, pp. 196–244. London: Routledge, [1948] edn.
- Weber, Max (1991b). "Politics as Vocation". In *From Max Weber: Essays in Sociology*, edited by Hans Heinrich Gerth and Charles Wright Mills, pp. 77–128. London: Routledge, [1948] edn.
- West, William J. (1987). *Truth betrayed*. London: Duckworth.
- Wheeler, M. (2004). "Supranational regulation: television and the European Union". *European Journal of Communication*, 19(3), 349–369.
- Wikström, Jan-Erik (). "Interview with Oloph Hansson". Sveriges Radio Dokumentarkiv.
- Williams, A. (1975). "Unbiased Study of Television News Bias". *The Journal of Communication*, 25(4), 190–199.
- Wyatt, Will (2003). *The Fun Factory: A Life in the BBC*. London: Aurum.
- YouGov (2004). "Greg Dyke and the case for war with Iraq". *Mail on Sunday*. URL <http://www.yougov.com/archives/pdf/DBD040101002.pdf>. Survey.
- Zaccaria, Roberto (1984). "Rai. La televisione che cambia". In *I rapporti tra la rai e il sistema politico*, edited by Roberto Zaccaria. Torino: Società Editrice Internazionale.
- Zaccaria, Roberto (1998). *Diritto dell'informazione e della comunicazione*. Padova: CEDAM.
- Zeno-Zencovich, Vincenzo (1983). "Natura giuridica del canone radiotelevisivo e suggellamento dell'apparecchio TV nella giurisprudenza più recente". In *Il Servizio Pubblico Radiotelevisivo*, pp. 397–414. Napoli: Jovene Editore.
- Åman, Valter, Eskilsson, Carl, Heimbürger, Hans, Helén, Gunnar, Larsson, Harald, Mattson, Lisa, Mellqvist, Svens,

Lindblad, Ingemar, and Brodd, Arne (1965). "Radion och televisionens framtid i sverige". *Statens offentliga utredningar*, 1965(20).

